

**Sherman Family Information**

By Sylvia Booth Acker

Material from Lawanna Gaines

Lawanna Gaines came across some interesting genealogical information when getting her home ready for sale in Rusk, TX. The yellowed pages were tucked away in an old book. The book had been left in the house when Lawanna and Fred Gaines purchased the house. There was also one sheet of what appears to be minutes of the Rusk, TX Library Club.

## Family Record

## BIRTHS OF CHILDREN

M. H. Sherman was borned February 1,, 1872

W. W. Sherman was borned February 10, 1874-Died Apr 2nd, 1971

B. F. Sherman was borned November 6, 1875

N . C. Sherman was borned November 27, 1877- Died May17, 1964

B. E. Sherman was borned November ~25, 1879

N. M, Sherman was borned September 25, 1881

T. A. Sherman was borned November 9, 1883-Died March 18, 1965

T. E. B. Sherman was borned: October 15. 1885

Lee Nora Sherman was borned April 25, 1889

Clifford Carl Sherman was borned October 10, 1890-Died Jul 27, 1935

(This is continued from the above page and includes both  
parents and one grandson--Ray)

## BIRTHS OF CHILDREN (Page #2)

J. H. Sherman was borned June 12, 1849 (Father) Died May 31, 1920

J. E. Sherman was borned October 26, 1855 (Mother)

John Moore Sherman was borned February 4, 1894 Deceased

Ray Holcomb Sherman was borned March 24, 1900 (Grandson), deceased

ORANGE COUNTY CALIFORNIA  
GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

## Sherman Family Information

### MARRIAGES

Etta Sherman was married January 16, 1890  
 W. W. Sherman was married august 3, 1898  
 T.A. Sherman was married May 14, 1903  
 B.F. Sherman was married May 28, 1899  
 N.C. Sherman was married August 25  
 Maude N. Sherman was married august 24, 1902  
 Belle Sherman was married July 9, 1905  
 Nora Sherman was married October 10, 1909  
 Carl Sherman was married July 2, 1913  
 John Moore Sherman was married October 26, 1913  
 Ray Holcomb Sherman was married May 26, 1923

### DEATHS

Bertie Ever Sherman departed this life July 6, 1881  
 J.H. Sherman died May 31, 1920  
 Clifford Carl Sherman died July 27, 1935

---

STATE OF TEXAS  
 COUNTY of Cherokee

I John T. Watson, Notary Public, hereby certify that the above is an exact copy of the family record of J. H. Sherman and wife, Mrs. J. e. Sherman as it appears in their family Bible which I have this day examined and copied. (Parenthesis are mine.)

Given under my hand and seal of office, at Maydelle, Texas, this 27th day of August 1942.

John T. Watson, Notary Public in and for  
 Cherokee County, Texas

ORANGE COUNTY CALIFORNIA  
 GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

DONATED BY  
LORRAINE HEALTON

**M. H. SHERMAN**  
**A PIONEER DEVELOPER OF THE**  
**PACIFIC SOUTHWEST**

**BY WILLIAM O. HENDRICKS**

**1971**  
**THE SHERMAN FOUNDATION**  
**CORONA DEL MAR, CALIFORNIA**



M. H. SHERMAN IN HIS LATER YEARS.



## M. H. SHERMAN

### A PIONEER DEVELOPER OF THE PACIFIC SOUTHWEST

THE overall development that has taken place in the Pacific Southwest during the last one hundred years has been nothing short of phenomenal. Among the principal ingredients that went into this development were the efforts of a number of outstanding individuals, men whose talents, vision, and hard work helped to bring it about. Not all of these individuals are widely known today. One such man is the subject of this sketch.

Moses Hazeltine Sherman was born on December 3, 1853, in the tiny farming hamlet of West Rupert, Vermont. He was descended from an old-line New England family, being distantly related to John Sherman the noted Puritan clergyman, to Roger Sherman of early national fame, and to the brothers John and William Tecumseh Sherman, prominent in national affairs during the latter half of the nineteenth century. The origin of his rather distinctive given names is unclear, although his father's youngest sister had married a man named Moses B. Hazeltine. In any case, he seems to have preferred going by the initials, M. H., or, as will be explained later, by the title, General.

A good part of Sherman's boyhood was spent on another family farm near Salem, New York, which, even though in a different state, was only several miles from his birthplace. Here, too, he received much of his early schooling, and, judging from his notebooks, was an unusually serious-minded and hard-working young man. Probably this was partly the influence of his father, who, while then a farmer, had formerly been a schoolmaster for a number of years. When he was not working or studying, young Sherman attended church regularly and spoke frequently at the local lyceum, debating such subjects as "Whether man had periled more life for honor or for money."

In 1869, Sherman entered Oswego (New York) State Normal School, a relatively new and then rather revolutionary teacher-training institution advocating the Pestalozzian methods of Object

Teaching (something of a forerunner of Progressive Education). Shortly thereafter, however, his education was interrupted and he took a job teaching at the Salem district school. Then, in the fall of 1871, following the death of his mother the previous year, he left for Wisconsin to teach. While in route and laying over in Chicago on the evening of Sunday, October 8, he was forced to flee from his room by the outbreak of the great Chicago fire.

Sherman later managed to resume his studies and, as the Normal School course at that time was only one year, to graduate from Oswego in July, 1873. He then received an appointment as principal of Hamilton (New York) Union Grade School for the term 1873-74. However, in ill health with what his family and friends feared might be consumption, he was soon to depart for the West and Arizona Territory.

Arizona at that time was not a particularly inviting place. Still wild, little developed, as yet untouched by railways, and with a non-Indian population of only slightly over ten thousand persons, it was regarded by some of the army officers who had tried to pacify it as nearly worthless and as fit solely for Indians. General William T. Sherman was reported to have said, "We have fought one war with Mexico to acquire Arizona, and we ought to have another to compel her to take it back." Nevertheless, Arizona was on the verge of a boom: during the next two decades the number of its cattle would triple, its mineral production increase 1500 per cent, and there was to be a great spurt in irrigation canal and railroad building. By 1890, the population was to grow to over 88,000—nearly a nine-fold increase in less than two decades.

In 1869, President Grant had appointed young A. P. K. Safford as governor of Arizona Territory. Safford is especially remembered for two things: obtaining and signing a legislative bill granting his own divorce, and being "the father of Arizona's public schools." Safford was from Vermont. While nothing has thus far been found to indicate how he heard of Sherman, Safford, in 1873, offered him a post teaching at the public school in Prescott. It was rumored the governor paid Sherman's way out; if true, most likely this was an advance and paid back. Sherman sailed from New York, crossed Panama, and continued on to San Francisco; doubling back to Los Angeles, he then went overland to Prescott by buckboard.

Although one of Arizona's leading towns, Prescott was hardly more than a boisterous, overgrown village of a few hundred inhabitants. It was attractively located, however, and was named in



honor of the eminent American historian of early Spanish America, its streets carrying such labels as Montezuma, Cortez, and Coronado—"after persons identified with the . . . history of the Territory."<sup>1</sup> It was notable among Arizona towns by having been settled almost entirely by Anglo-Americans, and especially New Englanders, and by the absence of adobe-style architecture, being constructed mainly of wood (which was to give rise to a series of destructive fires) with some later additions of brick and stone. Prescott did hold the distinction of having been the first civilian capitol of the territory, 1864-1867, before its transfer to Tucson. Moreover, in 1877, the capitol was to be restored to Prescott, where it would remain until 1889, when permanently relocated in Phoenix.

Initially, Sherman was the only teacher at Prescott, where he inaugurated the first graded school in Arizona. But the student body grew rapidly and the town soon built a new two-story school building—probably the best in the territory—which opened in 1876 with Sherman as principal. That same year he was delegated to represent Arizona at the Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia. Making his way East via Los Angeles, San Francisco, and overland on the transcontinental railroad, he also attended the National Teachers Convention in Baltimore. He combined his official functions with a visit to his family, departing for Arizona by steamship with his older sister, Lucy. Their first ship suffered an explosion a few days out of New York and they had to be towed back and transferred to another steamer. Sharing this eventful voyage with the Shermans was Madame Helena Modjeska, on her way to the Anaheim settlement. In Arizona, Lucy Sherman met and married Eli P. Clark, who for many years thereafter was to be a close business associate of Sherman.

Notwithstanding the famed medicinal effects of Arizona's climate, Governor Safford's health failed in 1877 and he consequently refused a third term. He was succeeded briefly by J. P. Hoyt and then, the following year, as an act of political patronage for an important but impoverished Republican party figure, President Hayes appointed John C. Fremont as governor. Fremont's wife, Jessie, though she did not stay long in Arizona (reportedly for reasons of health), was a volunteer teacher at Sherman's school, regaling the students with talks on her travels and lectures on world history.

<sup>1</sup> *History of Arizona Territory* (San Francisco: Wallace W. Elliott & Co., 1884; reprint ed., Flagstaff: Northland Press, 1964), p. 250.



SHERMAN AS ADJUTANT GENERAL.

In 1883, M. H. Sherman, at age 29, was appointed Adjutant General of Arizona Territory by Governor F. A. Tritle. From this post Sherman was afterward known by the honorary title of General.



THE VALLEY BANK

The Valley Bank of Phoenix opened for business in 1884, with M. H. Sherman as president, William Christy, cashier, and E. J. Bennett, assistant cashier.

Valley National Bank Collection



Sherman apparently got on well with Fremont, for he was appointed by the governor as Arizona's first regular superintendent of public instruction, a position formerly held *ex officio* by the governors. The legislature soon made the post elective and, in 1880, Sherman was voted into the office, taking considerable satisfaction in being the only Republican on the ticket to emerge victorious.<sup>2</sup>

As superintendent of public instruction (and head of the territorial board of education), Sherman drew up the territorial school laws, and it has been said that "to him were due in large part the legislative measures of the eighties which did so much to promote education in Arizona."<sup>3</sup> In 1881, Congress appropriated 72,000 acres of public lands to each of the several territories for support of education. The following year, Sherman, acting in his official capacity, selected the lands which were to help provide for the future University of Arizona. Brother-in-law E. P. Clark, meanwhile, was serving as territorial auditor during this period.

Fremont, because he was so often absent from Arizona in pursuit of his own endeavors, was forced to resign as governor in 1881. His successor, Frederick A. Tritle, in 1883, named Sherman to the post of Arizona's adjutant general, a position which he held for several years and from which he became known thereafter as General Sherman. The election of Grover Cleveland to the presidency, however, soon placed Arizona for the first time under a Democratic governor and, thus, brought an end to Sherman's career in government service in Arizona.

Even in his early days as a teacher in Prescott, Sherman's natural talent for finance had begun to emerge. He gradually obtained various pieces of townsite property in Prescott and also built a hostelry, the Sherman House. As time went on, he acquired shares in various mines, grazing lands, and considerable head of cattle, on which he made a good deal of money during this period of Arizona's rapid growth. By the early 1880's, though, he had largely transferred his field of operations to Arizona's Salt River Valley, in which Phoenix was the principal town.

Founded on what had been a lonely, desolate waste, Phoenix, unlike Prescott, was not a particularly attractive settlement. It re-

<sup>2</sup> Arizona was predominantly Democratic locally, but the long reign of Republicans in the White House during this era meant that territorial governors and their appointees were generally Republican.

<sup>3</sup> Rufus Kay Wylly, *Arizona, The History of a Frontier State* (Phoenix: Hobson & Herr, 1950), p. 179.

ceived what was hoped would be its prophetic name from the abundant evidence of occupation by an earlier people. When Sherman arrived, it had a population of less than two thousand. Significantly, however, the economy of Phoenix was to be primarily agricultural and, in contrast to most of Arizona's leading towns, not dependent on the mining industry for its future development. The key factor here, of course, was irrigation, and Sherman, with typical foresight, became involved in the building of the Arizona Canal; begun in 1883, it has long remained the main carrier of irrigation water in the Valley.

Early in 1884, Sherman co-founded and became president (later vice-president) of the Valley Bank of Phoenix. In 1887, he became active in building a street railway and, two years later, acquiring and merging several franchises, he formed and headed the Valley Street Railway Company. The lines were electrified (1893), expanded, and later became the Phoenix Railway Company of Arizona, in which he retained control until disposed of to the city in 1925. About 1910, he extended a rail line from Phoenix to Glendale, Arizona, a distance of about twelve miles, to connect with the Santa Fe. This line was a source of pride and amusement to the General, who delighted in describing it as "Not as long as some railroads, but just as wide!" He was also a major stockholder and vice president of the privately owned Phoenix Water Company and a stockholder in two other Arizona banks. He acquired large quantities of real estate in and around Phoenix and appears to have played an important role in the transfer of the capital from Prescott to Phoenix. He and a business associate, M. E. Collins, donated a ten-acre plot, then about one mile west of the center of town, on which the capitol building now stands.

While living in Phoenix, Sherman also acquired a wife, Harriet, the daughter of R. H. Pratt, a railroad man of San Francisco. Two daughters, Hazeltine and Lucy, were born to them, and the General adopted his wife's previous son, Robert, and built a fine new house for his family in Phoenix.<sup>4</sup> By 1890, he was entitled to look back on the seventeen years he had been in Arizona with a great deal of satisfaction. Arriving as a near-penniless youth of nineteen, he was now a highly successful man, the largest taxpayer in the county and

<sup>4</sup> Robert P. Sherman died about 1930, but he had a son who is still living. Lucy Sherman Robertson died in 1959 and Hazeltine Sherman Keever in 1968; neither of the daughters left children. ♣



one of the largest in the whole territory. Nevertheless, he was ready for larger fields to conquer.

During his years in Arizona, Sherman frequently made trips to California and followed with considerable attention the development occurring in Southern California. He had taken particular notice of the boom of 1887 and, undaunted by its collapse, was convinced of the great future that lay before Los Angeles and its environs. Events, of course, were to prove him right. To use merely one index, the population of Los Angeles—50,000 in 1890—was to reach nearly twenty-five times that figure by 1930. And as one of his later associates, Hobart J. Whitley, was fond of saying, "Peoples makes values."

Sherman had found several interests in Southern California. For one thing, he had become a founding stockholder and director in the recently organized, Los Angeles-based National Bank of California. But, profit though he might in other endeavors, his heart always belonged to transportation, and he had formed an especially keen interest in the Los Angeles street railway situation. Moving to Los Angeles, he managed to gain control of several street railway franchises. He then organized the Los Angeles Consolidated Electric Railway Company and, with Clark as his associate, built the city's electric street railway system. By the end of 1893, this company reportedly was operating thirty-five miles of electric line, as well as fourteen miles of horse-drawn and twenty-one miles of cable line, and altogether that year carried nearly twelve million passengers.<sup>5</sup> In 1895, through another company, they constructed Southern California's first electric interurban railway, between Los Angeles and Pasadena. Shortly afterward, Henry E. Huntington and a small group of San Francisco capitalists, headed by I. W. Hellman, acquired both the Los Angeles system and the Pasadena line, using the latter as the nucleus for the formation of the Pacific Electric, an interurban system that was to become world-renowned.

The vision of Sherman and Clark next became focused on the area between Los Angeles and the coast. Through their Los Angeles Pacific lines and further electric railway building over the ensuing fifteen years, they were instrumental in the development of the whole area west of Los Angeles as far as the beaches and from Santa Monica to Redondo. This was the railway of the once-famous Balloon Route between Los Angeles and the sea. And on Santa Monica

<sup>5</sup> G. Wharton James, *Tourists' Guide to South California* (Los Angeles: B. R. Baumgardt & Co., 1894), p. 172.

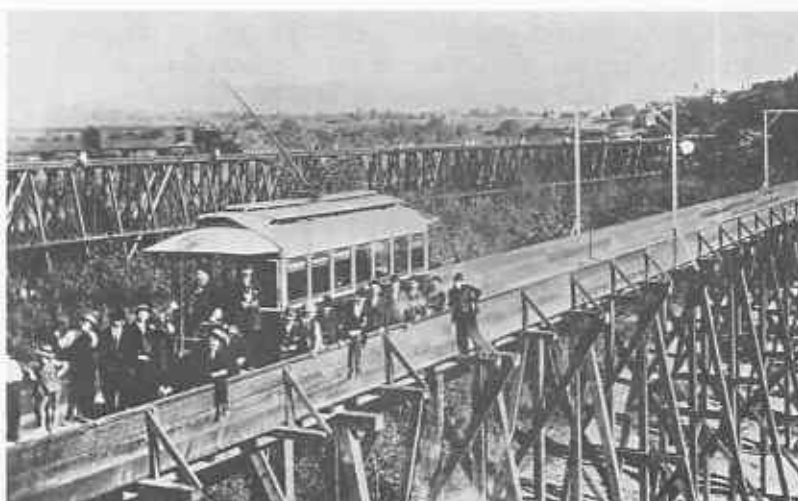




## ELECTRIC POWER PLANT

The main power house of the Los Angeles Consolidated Electric Railway was located on Central Avenue, between Sixth and Seventh streets. Opened in 1891 and shown here in 1892, it also provided offices, car storage, and shop facilities.

*Title Insurance & Trust Company Collection*



## FORERUNNER OF PACIFIC ELECTRIC

The Pasadena & Los Angeles Electric Railway, shown here bridging the Arroyo Seco at Garvanza, opened on May 6, 1895. Built by Sherman and Clark, it was the first electric interurban railway in Southern California.

*Title Insurance and Trust Company Collection*

Boulevard just west of La Cienega, where railway equipment facilities and a power house were located, once stood the little town of Sherman.<sup>6</sup> In later years, with the growth of the motion picture industry, the name Hollywood became so glamorous that there arose a North, East, South, and West Hollywood, the latter eventually supplanting the name Sherman.

In 1910 and 1911, the Southern Pacific bought out both the Los Angeles Pacific and the Pacific Electric and merged them into the vast Pacific Electric Railway system of later times. Actually, although keeping the name Pacific Electric, the officers surviving the merger were chiefly Los Angeles Pacific men, and Sherman for many years was on the board of directors of the new company.

In Los Angeles, the General returned to a public post, holding appointments to the Board of Water Commissioners between 1903 and 1910. It was during his early years on this board that the city began its fateful search for outside sources of water and the Owens River project was undertaken.

After living in Los Angeles for several years, Sherman became closely associated with General Harrison Gray Otis and his son-in-law, Harry Chandler, both of the *Los Angeles Times*, Otto F. Brant of the Title Insurance and Trust Company, H. J. Whitley, and a number of other prominent Los Angeles businessmen and developers. In 1901, Sherman helped to organize a syndicate that bought and subdivided over the next few years a large part of Hollywood. Later, in the 1920's, he was active in the foothill development of "Hollywoodland," whose great hillside sign—with LAND lopped off—now reads simply HOLLYWOOD. Sherman was one of the key members of another syndicate that in 1910 bought and later subdivided 47,500 acres in the southerly half of the San Fernando Valley—"the greatest venture in subdividing in the Valley's, and perhaps in Los Angeles County's history."<sup>7</sup> Sherman Way and Sherman Oaks commemorate his activities in this locale.

Sherman was also a key member of the syndicate that in 1911 bought the gigantic Tejon Ranch, 270,000 acres straddling the Te-

<sup>6</sup> The electric railway power plant at Sherman, built in 1896 at a reported cost of \$80,000, was soon to be rocked by a series of mysterious explosions. The trouble was finally traced to the water wells. They were not only feeding water into the boilers but were also injecting a volatile mixture of oil and natural gas, for it turned out that the area was underlaid with petroleum deposits. Before long, Sherman and Clark, in addition to their other enterprises, found themselves engaging in the oil business.

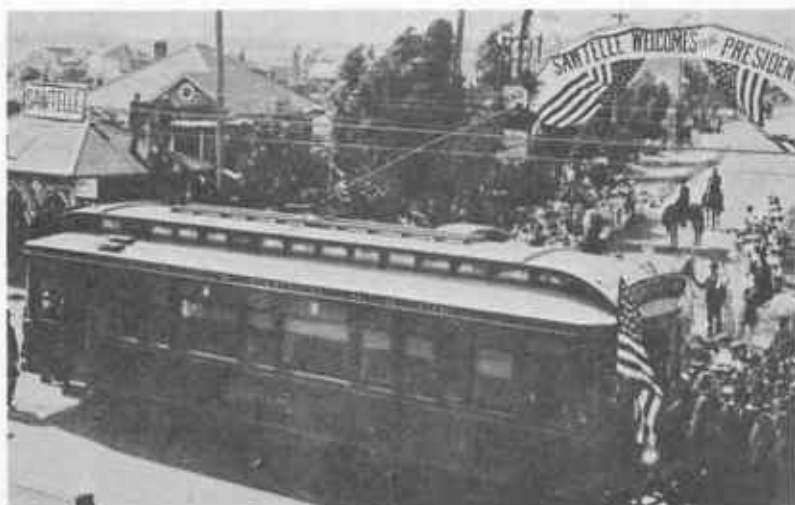
<sup>7</sup> W. W. Robinson, *The Story of San Fernando Valley* (Los Angeles: Title Insurance and Trust Company, 1961), p. 37.



#### CONNECTING LOS ANGELES WITH THE SEASHORE

The first cars of the newly built electric railway from Los Angeles reached Santa Monica on April 1, 1896. A gala celebration ensued: guns were fired, bands played, schools dismissed classes, and a general holiday was declared. Soon extended down the coast as far as Redondo, this railway was credited with doubling the size of the beach cities within five years.

*Security Pacific National Bank Collection*



#### SHERMAN'S PRIVATE CAR

Built to his order at the Sherman Shops in 1900, Sherman's private car was officially named "Mermaid." It entered service the next year and ranged far and wide in the Los Angeles area transporting notables. On May 9, 1901, as shown here, it carried President McKinley and members of his cabinet to the Soldiers' Home at Sawtelle. The following New Year's Day, it carried Stanford's football team to Pasadena for the first of what were later to become the famous Rose Bowl games.

*Courtesy of Interurbans*

hachapi Mountains. And although not one of the original group of purchasers, he became a major owner in the Colorado River Land Company, a Mexican corporation with an 842,000-acre holding on the Mexican counterpart to the Imperial Valley. It was largely this company's application of capital and technology to the early development of the Mexicali Valley that laid the foundation for much of the subsequent economic boom in northern Baja California.

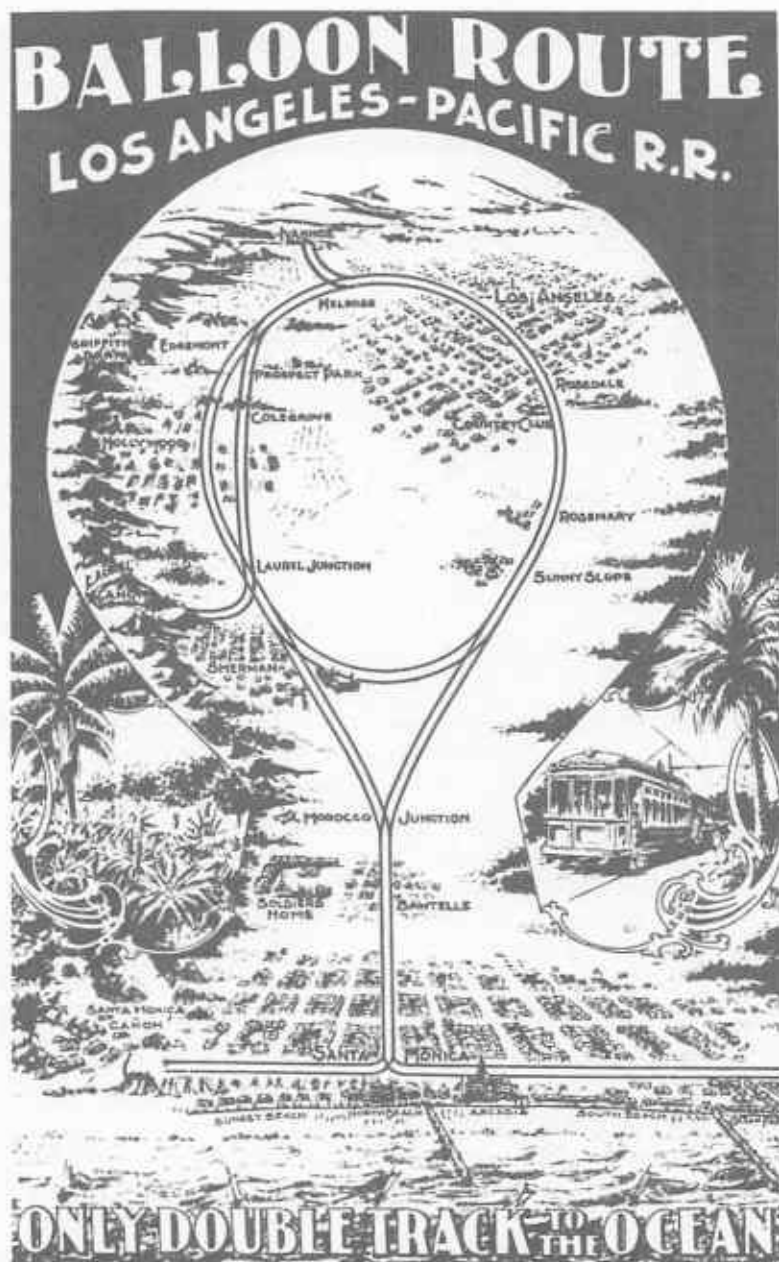
In addition to some of the things already noted, Sherman also owned various other real estate and buildings and, through his railway construction activities, had acquired rather extensive property interests in such areas as Culver City and Del Rey. And aside from holding directorships in many of the previously mentioned organizations, he was also a director of the Farmers & Merchants National Bank, the Yosemite Park & Curry Company, and a number of other corporations in the Pacific Southwest.

During his later years, after the end of World War I, as the Southland found itself neglected when it came to steamship service, Sherman became involved in a new aspect of transportation. He helped to form and later became president of the Los Angeles Steamship Company, whose *Harvard* and *Yale* plied between Los Angeles and San Francisco and whose *City of Los Angeles* and *City of Honolulu* offered the finest in accommodations to Hawaii. The line was beset with difficulties, however, such as the introduction of the Matson Line's fast and luxurious *Malolo* and the destruction by fire of the *City of Honolulu*. Finally, unable to make many inroads on the islands' freight business, the Los Angeles Steamship Company was sold about 1930 to the Matson company.

What of Sherman the man? In the first place, like so many successful men of his day, he was a marked individualist. As perhaps befitted his title of General, he had a rather loud, authoritative voice, could speak very bluntly, and liked to plan and supervise in a somewhat commanding manner. He also had a temper. On the other hand, he could be quite gentle and sentimental at times, and extremely generous.

Although he saw to it that his beneficences did not become widely advertised, he went much further than merely donating money to formal charities and personally helped, directly or indirectly, probably more people in Los Angeles than any other of our early-day citizens. He maintained a long pension list of worthy unfortunates and had given away immense sums





THE BALLOON ROUTE PICTURE-MAP

Map portion of an old wall bill, dating about 1902, showing the Balloon Route, once one of the most famous trolley trips in Southern California. A good many changes have occurred in the area since then. Morocco Junction, for instance, is better known today as Beverly Hills.

*Courtesy of Donald Duke*

in personal aid. At Christmas time he was in his element—last year [1931], for instance, he made Christmas presents to between 1000 and 2000 persons, having his clerks, stenographers and helpers buying, wrapping and distributing remembrances to all the old-time citizens and their families with whom he had ever been in contact.<sup>8</sup>

Despite the fact that Sherman was extremely hard-working—or perhaps because of it—he was in ill health during much of his life. One aspect of this was poor circulation, owing to which a common feature of his apparel was an enormous, below-knee-length overcoat. Living as he did on Main Street in the days when downtown Los Angeles had a bustling social life, he was on at least one occasion mistaken in his coat for a theatrical character and his autograph solicited. One facet of his personality was that he could sometimes become mentally preoccupied and nearly oblivious to what was going on around him. Once, when wearing his great coat and riding a horse so sway-backed that his feet nearly touched the ground, he slowly rode across a baseball diamond in a park while a game was in progress—completely lost in his own thoughts. And surprisingly, for a man so closely associated with railways and steamships and who had a passion for fine motor cars, the General was almost completely devoid of mechanical aptitude or comprehension. On one instance, when he had an engagement but was telephoned from a garage with the news that the magneto on his car had gone out, he replied: "Well, leave the magneto to be repaired and bring the car around."

The General and his wife, after coming to Los Angeles, separated and then in 1908 were divorced. Although women found him attractive and several tried to set their caps for him, he never remarried. For nearly thirty-five years, he lived and worked in a suite of rooms at the Westminster Hotel. While one of the city's finest establishments when he first took up residence there, it had long since markedly declined. Finally, in the late 1920's, he moved from the hotel and took a suite of apartments on Rampart Boulevard near Sixth. He also obtained a house on Bay Island, Newport Beach. Here, at age seventy-eight, he died on September 9, 1932, spared by a few months the ordeal of seeing a Democrat—only the third since his boyhood—gain the presidency. For like most of his colleagues, and a proper Vermonter, he was a staunch Republican of the Democrats-can-do-no-right school.

<sup>8</sup> *Los Angeles Times*, September 10, 1932, II, 2.



THE TOWN OF SHERMAN

View, looking southward about 1912, of a portion of the town of Sherman, now West Hollywood. Dubbed "Queen of the Foothills," the town grew up around the Sherman Shops, part of which can be seen on the far side. In the distance are derricks of what was sometimes called the Sherman oil field.

Sherman left an estate which, even at the depressed values of 1932, was worth several million dollars. He left sizeable sums to the University of Southern California, Pomona College, California Institute of Technology, and Grinnell College, Iowa. The depression, however, had taken its toll. Cash was scarce and sizeable loans were due.<sup>9</sup> Much of his estate was, of course, in land and of long term rather than immediately negotiable value. Actually, this was true of his activities through most of his lifetime. He had frequently been strapped for funds to carry out his ventures and many of his accomplishments were made possible only because of the confidence he inspired and his ability to borrow money. He could be extremely persuasive, and potential but reluctant investors, familiar with his powers, were sometimes known to flee when they saw him coming, aware that they might not be able to resist his coaxing. It was said of him that "He could talk money out of the birds in the trees!" A

<sup>9</sup> Probably the most critical problem facing his estate was that Sherman, along with several other principal owners of the Colorado River Land Company, had signed notes to various banks totaling nearly two and a half million dollars to cover depression-caused losses in the Mexican operation.



perturbed creditor for \$30,000 worth of railway ties reportedly once called on Sherman to demand payment. On leaving, wrapped in a smile, he was asked by another man waiting in the anteroom whether he had been successful in collecting. "Oh, better than that," he happily replied, "I sold him \$30,000 more ties."

It goes without saying that business practices in Sherman's time were considerably different than they are now. For instance, a common practice then in raising funds for a venture was simply to organize a company, have securities printed, and find somebody to loan money on them. When the loan became due, new securities could be printed and the process repeated. Companies were formed right and left, and assets shifted around even faster. Of course, many of the things done in those days could not be legally done today. Still, if it is a genuine understanding of an earlier era that is being sought, an effort should be made to avoid the pitfall of presentism: judging another era by the standards of one's own time.

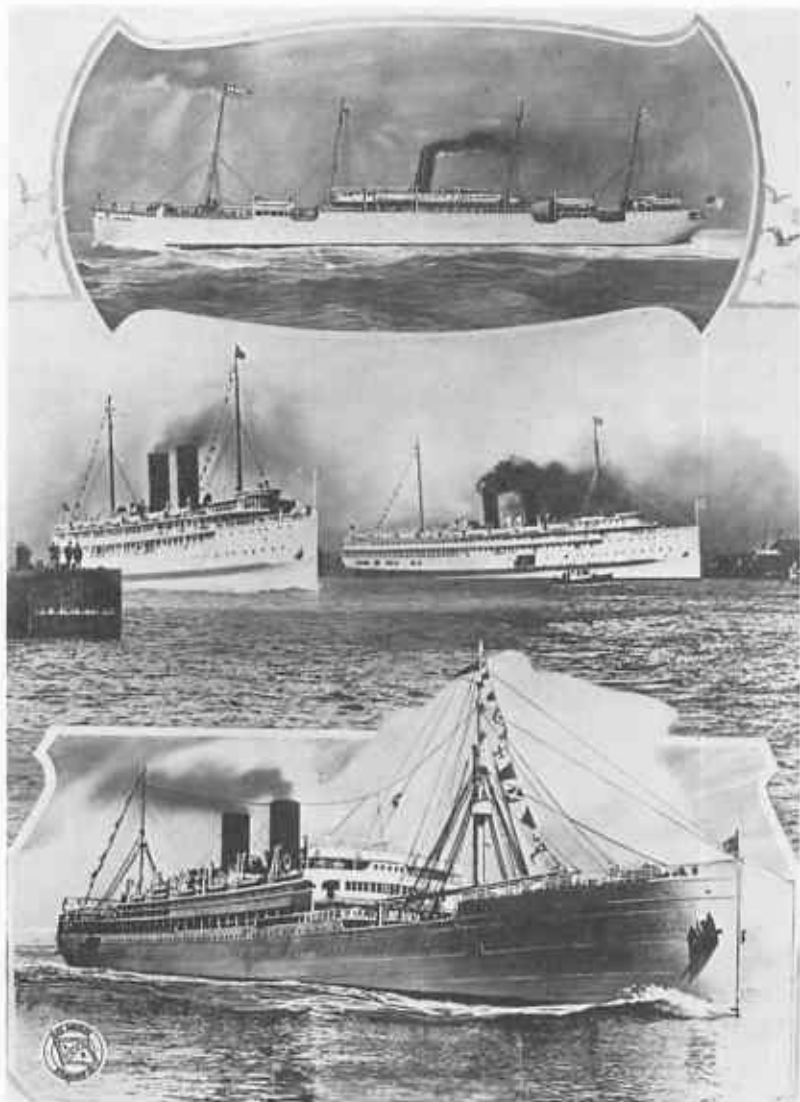
Perhaps the best way to sum up Sherman's life is with a few excerpts from the lengthy obituary that appeared in the *Los Angeles Times*<sup>10</sup> and was probably contributed in part by his long-time friend and close associate, Harry Chandler.

In the early days in California when there was little money in the State, it was the General's genius and unfailing energy—and his alone—that raised vast sums of money for the financing of his first great constructive enterprises. His dream was to create a system of electric railways as the first essential in the development of the area in the future of which he had such an abiding faith. Years were required to accomplish his task, nor did he hesitate to make any and every sacrifice necessary for the fulfillment of his plans, which were dominated by a genuine desire to serve the counties of Southern California.

His vision of the potential greatness of Los Angeles and his ability to convince capitalists in San Francisco and the East of the soundness of his expectations enabled him to bring into existence his railroads and other enterprises and also served to attract many other aggressive young business men with capital to Los Angeles in that period.

The outstanding characteristic of all the General's activities throughout his long career as a business leader and community

<sup>10</sup> In the final edition of September 9 and, slightly modified and with additional material, in the regular edition of September 10, 1932, II, 1.



FOUR VESSELS OF THE LOS ANGELES STEAMSHIP CO.

The *Calawaii* (top) and *City of Los Angeles* (bottom), in service to Hawaii; the sister ships *Harvard* and *Yale* (center), in coastal service between Los Angeles, San Diego, and San Francisco.

builder, as attested by the many who have been associated with him, was the fact that above all else he prized his name and always kept his word. A promise made or an obligation undertaken were sacred things to him.

His passing turns a significant page in the history of Los Angeles, for he was one of the last of the notable group of pioneers whose vision was mainly responsible for the city's phenomenal progress.

In 1951, Arnold D. Haskell, the General's close personal assistant for nearly twenty years prior to his death and the executor of his estate, established the Sherman Foundation. A non-profit organization, its donors are Sherman's three principal heirs: his two daughters and Haskell. During subsequent years, the Foundation has engaged in various humanitarian, philanthropic, and educational endeavors—aiding hospitals, youth groups, scientific research, the Los Angeles Music Center, and so on. At the Sherman Foundation Center, in Corona del Mar, it provides and maintains the Coffee Garden, operated by the Newport Harbor Service League, all proceeds from which go to support the League's numerous community activities and charities. The Garden is designed as a permanent exhibit of specimen plants as well as seasonal floral displays. The Foundation also operates, at Dana Point, the Sherman Foundation Experimental Center, where horticultural and oceanographic research are conducted. Here, in addition to the work carried on by its own staff, more than fifty local students are currently participating in various study-projects. For these study-projects, each student receives credits toward his education.

Within the last few years, the Foundation has also undertaken a program of historical research and established its Research Library. The historical research is focused on the extraordinary development that has occurred in the Pacific Southwest during the last one hundred years and some of the factors that have brought it about. The Research Library, located at the Foundation Center, in Corona del Mar, presently contains approximately three thousand published items and several hundred thousand manuscript-type materials. The latter relate mainly to the manifold business affairs in which Sherman and some of his associates were involved; they include the papers of the Brant family, whose original California progenitor, Otto Freeman Brant, was one of the founders of Title Insurance and Trust Company and very prominent in early land development

activities. On microfilm there are about two hundred pertinent master's theses and doctoral dissertations, as well as the back files of the *Los Angeles Times*. As one of its projects, the Foundation has microfilmed the *Calxico Chronicle*, rescuing from oblivion the rapidly disintegrating files of this interesting border newspaper whose pages contain much information on the history of the Imperial and Mexicali Valleys. The Research Library is open to students or any other persons with a serious interest in this field. Needless to say, its facilities have provided the resources for this sketch of some of M. H. Sherman's contributions to the development of the Pacific Southwest.

*Printed by*  
*Grant Dahlstrom at The Castle Press*  
*Pasadena, California*  
*1971*



# Greene County Historical Journal

A Publication of the Greene County Historical Society, Inc.

U.S. Route 9-W

Coxsackie, N. Y. 12051

Vol. 11, Issue 4

Winter, 1987



Joseph Brant

Mohawk Chief who fought for English in the American Revolution

## INDIANS OF THE GREENE COUNTY AREA

--Edna Ingalls Adams

The following article which seeks to focus the reader's attention on the Indian culture of Greene County is excerpted from a longer 14-page oral history presentation given by the author, Edna Ingalls Adams, before various public and semi-public organizations.

Mrs. Adams is a dedicated Greenville town historian who continues to promote the cause of local history by research leading to oral and written recordings. Earlier articles by her have been published in this *QUARTERLY JOURNAL*.  
The Editor

The first mention we have of "our" Indians is the comment by Henry Hudson and his sailors when they speak of those they met in 1609. As Hudson's ship, the *Half Moon*, made its way up the river there were many contacts with these Indians. At anchor just north of Athens the boat was visited by what were probably the Catskill Indians (the Lenni Lanape, a part of the Algonquin tribe). They were called by Hudson and his men a "very loving people." They brought gifts of corn, squash, and tobacco receiving trifles in return.

(continued on page 32)

## A NEW BALTIMORE SEQUEL: Joseph Sherman (1786-1876)

--Raymond Beecher

Drawing upon an extensive collection of primary source material generously made available by Mrs. Edward Ely Sherman, the *JOURNAL* now details the life of Joseph Sherman. Readers who are not acquainted with the lives of Joseph's parents, Paul and Bathsheba Bowen Sherman, may want to review the first of this Sherman series which appeared in the Winter 1986 issue.

To further assist the reader in the identification of the various offspring of Joseph and Charlotte Ely Sherman a genealogical listing follows:

The children of Joseph and Charlotte Ely Sherman married April 1, 1810.

1. Augustus, born June 3, 1811; married Elizabeth B. Smith July 31, 1837; he died March 24, 1846. No children.
2. Ann Frances, born June 9, 1813; married George N. Keith September 5, 1837; she died December 31, 1887. Children - Henry Clay, Mary Charlotte and Edward Augustus.
3. Emeline, born October 31, 1815; married Judge James M. Smith June 30, 1836; she died March 8, 1894. Several children and stepchildren.
4. Edward Ely, born November 2, 1817; married Anna Hotaling March 4, 1842; he died November 17, 1898. Two sons - Augustus and Joseph.
5. Charlotte, born December 12, 1819; married Addison P. Cook September 1, 1846; she died January 6, 1884. Three sons - George S., Frank H. and Percy T.
6. Mariah Antonette, born February 28, 1822; married Henry D. Felter November 5, 1845; she died November 17, 1898. No children.
7. Cecelia (Celia), born June 1, 1825; married (1) James B. Besly October 30, 1851; married (2) William A. Dibble October 17, 1867; she died January 10, 1895. Two sons from first marriage - James G. (1855 - 1866) and Joseph S. (1858 - 1864).
8. Victoria, born August 8, 1830; married Frederick Frelinghusen December 27, 1855; she died in July, 1914. Children were Joseph, John and Charlotte.

Like his father's, Joseph Sherman's life had many facets - real estate developer, trading station partner, sloop captain, civic and church leader, postmaster, as well as parent figure to the several children of his marriage to Charlotte Ely. He came to the hamlet of New Baltimore in 1791, a part of the Paul and Bathsheba Sherman entour-

(continued on page 33)

## Indians *(continued from page 32)*

thousand pieces of crown gold that he couldn't. Norsereddin immediately made plans to go up to Shandaken's camp to ingratiate himself with the Indians. He became a part of their life, hunting and fishing with them. After six months he discovered that he really was in love with Lotowana. He approached Shandaken and told him of his love and requested Lotowana's hand. Shandaken politely told him that he would be much happier with a bride from his own people. Norsereddin would not accept this suggestion and kept on demanding Lotowana as a bride. He became enraged to think that an Indian would refuse him! He angrily pushed Shandaken, who hurled him down. The other warriors drove him from the camp.

Norsereddin left and quickly planned his revenge. He devised a spring mechanism in a lovely box containing the fang of a poisonous snake. He returned to the camp and making many apologies for his previous behavior asked if he could give Lotowana a gift since she was to be married to her Mohawk chief the next day. Permission was given and Norsereddin immediately left the camp. Of course when Lotowana opened the box the poisonous fang shot out and she died almost at once. The Indians caught Norsereddin and the decision was made to burn him at the stake. This was promptly done and his ashes were left to blow in the wind.

When I go to the Mountain House site every year, I now think I can hear Norsereddin's screams and see the Indians dancing around him. This story was handed down to each generation by the old Dutch settlers.

The Mohawks were a part of the Five Nations and Keeper of the Eastern Door of the Long House of the Iroquois Confederacy. They were much better organized than the various tribes of the Algonquians, including the Delawares. The Mohawks fought for supremacy of the lands along the river; the decisive battle fought on Roger's Island near Catskill (or perhaps on Wanton Island below Catskill) gave the Mohawks a victory in about 1673. Surprisingly they never claimed this land. Most of the land in the Schoharie Valley and in Cherry Valley belonged to the Iroquois Nation – the five tribes of the Confederacy. It may have been formed as early as the mid 1400's. Benjamin Franklin was greatly impressed by "so lasting and powerful a union of what he called ignorant savvages." During the current bicentennial of the United States Constitution acknowledgment has been made of the constitution of the Iroquois Confederacy as it affected some of the basic provisions of the 1787 document.

The Confederacy still functions today but it is weakened. Some Iroquois are still in New York although most had to move to Canada after the American Revolution as they had remained loyal to Great Britain. A group of Indian dancers who perform in the Iroquois Festival

in Cobleskill every year are descendants of those emigrants. It is estimated that there are about 12,000 Iroquois living in New York City today. These are the "sky walkers" who have a special talent for working on high steel structures. They personify Native American achievers in our polyglot society. It is also good to know that many Iroquois are remaining true to their cultural roots.

□ □ □ □ □

## Joseph Sherman *(continued from page 31)*

age migrating by sailing vessel from Tiverton, Rhode Island. Although tempted in later years by son Augustus to relocate at Charleston, South Carolina, he never broke his strong ties to the hamlet he helped develop. Even in death which came in 1876, he was interred in the Sherman vault on Sherman land at the river. (In later years when private burial vaults went out of style, the various family bodies were reburied in Chestnut Lawn Cemetery, township of New Baltimore.)

Tangible evidence of Joseph Sherman's prosperity upon reaching middle age can still be seen in his 1828-29 federal style wood-framed structure on the west bank of the Hudson River at the hamlet. Minus south wing and porches, it remains structurally unaltered: kitchen, cook's room and storage areas in the basement; a main floor consisting of front and back parlors, dining room, and family sitting room, all connected to a wide central hallway with its graceful balustraded staircase; a second floor of wide central passageway and spacious bedrooms; and finally a large storage attic. The architectural features which distinguish the house indicate Joseph was doing more than merely providing his growing family with a newer, more spacious residence. The luxurious embellishments in the structure include balanced recessed alcoves with side wall cabinets, nine fireplaces with their wood carved mantels, a graceful open stairway, as well as acorn motif decorative trim. Even the basement kitchen staircase received a craftsman's attention. In later years, widowed Sherman daughters would use the homestead as a summer residence and here today Mrs. Edward Ely Sherman maintains the link with past generations. It is a family heritage almost unique in Greene County.

College bound young sons were the exception in the closing years of the eighteenth and the early years of the nineteenth centuries. Generally, after limited local schooling, these lads either followed in their father's footsteps occupationwise, were apprenticed out to learn a trade, or as young adults migrated to metropolitan centers or went westward to the newly developed states of the union. Joseph Sherman was to gain his occupational experience at his father's trading station, eventually taking over the firm itself.

The first attempt on the part of Paul Sherman to establish this eldest son as an independent businessman came in 1798 when Joseph was only eighteen years of age. On September 1 of that year he sold Joseph an acre of land on Hannacroix Creek "together with the Bark house, tan Vatt and Bark Mill thereon standing." The sale and purchase price was set at \$1,000, secured by a mortgage due in seven years. The two witnesses to this

*(continued on page 34)*



*Ann Frances*



*Edward Ely Sherman*



*Charlotte Augusta*



*Marie (Mariah) Antonette*



*Victoria*





*Joseph Sherman*



*Sherman Homestead*



*Cecelia (Celia)*



*Emeline (Em)*



*Charlotte Ely Sherman - Mother*



*Augustus Sherman*

**Joseph Sherman** (continued from page 35)

family transaction were John Plum Jr. and Conrad Hotaling.

From the earliest years of the country's settlement mill sites and water power rights had special monetary value. The channeled water from creek to mill pond, to flume, and to water wheel provided the necessary mechanical power in the various manufacturing processes. Bark, saw, grist, fulling and paper processing were among the many types of small industrial establishments. Paul Sherman had been attracted to land on the Hannacroix from his first arrival. In 1797 he had purchased the aforementioned bark mill from Edward Hallock. Adjacent was a much larger tract of land previously purchased by David Dinsmore and Paul Sherman in common. The old road (now abandoned) crossed the Hannacroix at the bark mill site.

The challenge to make the bark mill and tanning operation a commercial success was a difficult one for Joseph, even with his father watching and advising. The workmen, certainly including Joseph himself, had to grind the outer bark from the hemlock and oak trees, mix it with chemicals, add it to the large water-filled vats into which were soaked the raw hides to be cured. Just how many hides were imported by sloop and how many came in locally from surrounding farms, is uncertain. Competition was certainly present in the Sherrill tannery at Greenville, the Ashley one at Catskill, while others continued to expand their similar interests on the mountain top. Environmental concerns over pollution of streams was not a recognizable problem of the time.

Whatever the reason or reasons, this first effort by young Joseph Sherman was not successful. One suspects contributing factors were the shortage of local bark, costs of transportation rehandling, as well as competition from other tanneries. On April 1, 1801, by quit-claim deed, Joseph Sherman transferred title to the Bark Mill lot back to his father. Thereafter he worked at the hamlet trading station, sailing the Hudson on Sherman sloops, and as a consequence gained the necessary business experience and skills which would serve him in good stead for the remainder of his lifetime.

That Joseph Sherman succeeded in this second economic endeavor is evidenced by Paul Sherman's willingness to sell the Sherman undivided half interest in the trading station to Joseph and the latter's new partner, Matthew Miller. That transaction took place in the year 1810. Thereafter, until after the Civil War, Joseph and his various partners, including his son Edward Ely Sherman, traded in local agricultural and manufactured goods for resale elsewhere as well as importing merchandise for sale on the retail level.

As Paul Sherman's health deteriorated, he and his wife, Bathsheba, gradually sold their land holdings at or near the hamlet to this eldest son Joseph. Included were the unsold Sherman portion of the building lot subdivision promoted by the Vanderzees and Shermans, a subdivision surveyed by John D. Spoor in October 1809. Title to twenty-three lots passed on August 23, 1820, a few months before Paul Sherman's death. That same summer,

the lot on which Joseph was to build the aforementioned 1828-29 house was sold to him by the father for \$1,000. From the price one suspects it contained some sort of building in addition to the land itself. In settling his father's estate, and in caring for his mother and one brother (the sisters were all married), Joseph demonstrated those feelings of family affection and concern he would maintain throughout his lifetime. Bathsheba, his mother, recognizing Joseph's high degree of family responsibility, left him a special legacy in the form of the mahogany Chippendale style desk belonging to her husband, Paul Sherman. (That desk, now part of the Edward Ely Sherman Memorial Collection, is at the Bronck Museum.)

The designation "Captain" for Joseph Sherman was not merely one of courtesy. In the earlier years he was actually a sailing master but as the years passed, gradually relinquished this responsibility to John Kennedy Brown, Captain Mull and others. Yet he could be frequently found in the Brooklyn - New York area transacting business. Occasional clues to his whereabouts surface in his surviving correspondence. Like all correspondence of the time, one should note Joseph's excessive use of capital letters to stress important words and the lack of periods at the end of sentences.

New York August 2<sup>d</sup> 1837

Mrs. Sherman

I wrote Edward [son] yeasterday that I arrived here Monday Evening quite unwell. on going to Bed took two Doses of No. 6 and Covered up warm and in fifteen minutes was in a profuse perspiration next morning was Much Better but Yeasterday and to Days Heat has almost overcome me I forgot to mention that on Monday I Looked into the Carriage Repository [warehouse and showroom] to Look at Some Light one Horse Barouches [four-wheeled vehicles with a driver's seat in front, two double seats inside facing each other, and a folding top] for you was offered a very tastely 250 dollar Barouche for 180 dollars it came near to filling my Eye that I lugged Out my Old Wallet and behold I could only count one Hundred dollars Out of it and therefore had to give it this go-bye until in Better Circumstances Expect to Leave town to morrow morning. have been offered a Seat in a private carriage with a gentleman and Lady to travel 80 miles on my Route did not accept or refuse wanted to Learn whether I was to be Coachee [sitting outside] or Not before giving an Answer think I shall Refuse have not time to say more before the Boat Leaves.

/s/ J Sherman

The Hudson River sloops of those eras did not carry the aura of excitement and glamour attached to today's replicas such as the *Clearwater*. Rather they were the work horses on the Hudson, particularly for bulk cargo: slow moving, with frequent stops, controlled by wind and tide, small crews, few passengers - this was the common scenario. Shipments of 80 tons of coal per trip illustrate this point, as well as the letter written to Joseph by son Augustus then at New York.

New York December 2, 1843

Joseph Sherman Esq.,

Dear Sir The Sloop States Rights left for home this afternoon at 3 O'clock Wind Northwest The John Jay

(continued on page 37)

**Joseph Sherman** (continued from page 36)

had not arrived yet We have had a good deal of Stormy weather here this week The States Rights did not get her rye out until this morning She came night before last to where Dayton had Sold the Rye when she got there they found 3 vessels a head of them which had to be discharged first by getting Briggs to put it all up at once we got a head of their last by which she was Enabled to get [out] to day The rye is to be 65¢ Now worth of oats sold 32¢ The S.R. [States Rights] has nothing on board but one bbl applesauce - BW [buckwheat] Flour John Conger is down here waiting for the J Jay I shall not be up untill some time next week have been to Williamsburgh a good part of this for there was a good deal of trouble about getting things off there John L Rouse put on a load of 16 or 18# [hundredweight] oats - musty besides on board which was on top of all the rest and like to have prevented the Sale of them We had to break away and shovel off the top into the forward hole and so managed to get them off by making a deduction on that Load They were put in at the Brick Yard & John told me at the time they were good - the Jay is just in all in good order The Hay I expect Palmer will take Hinsdale takes the Flour and Oats M L I think will take the Barley he will know Monday

Yours  
/s/ A Sherman

Emeline is very well  
[Joseph Sherman's daughter  
married to Judge James M. Smith.]

In understanding the life of Joseph Sherman at New Baltimore, attention must also be directed to his wife, Charlotte Ely. Described as "of a generous heart and having an open hand for friends and the friendless," Charlotte Ely was a woman of character and presence. Prior to her marriage to Joseph Sherman by the Reverend Westervelt on April 1, 1810, she had assisted her father, Dr. Worthington Ely, in his medical practice as well as carrying family household responsibilities. After her marriage, she fitted easily into the role of wife and mother. One can well imagine her delight when the time came to move into the newly constructed 1828-29 house, a dwelling with adequate accommodation for the growing family as well as for the household help. At the time of her death on July 25, 1861, her seven surviving children were at her bedside, the last arriving but a short time before her passing. It speaks well for their affection for their mother. Joseph never remarried.

Charlotte Ely left her descendants an intangible legacy of Revolutionary War involvement by her forebears, she being the granddaughter of Colonel John Ely of Saybrook, Connecticut. Colonel Ely had been called upon to serve with the army and for a time was on the northern frontier of New York, inoculating the troops against smallpox. Later he was with the American forces on Long Island where he was captured by the British. Paroled, he continued to assist the American prisoners of the British army, often under difficult conditions and having to utilize his own funds. Friend of Washington and Lafayette, Colonel Ely was a patriot of renown. British raiding parties from Long Island ravaged

the Connecticut coastline and during one of their raids put the torch to Col. Ely's smallpox hospital on Duck Island. In after years the next generation tried to interest Congress in providing financial remuneration for Ely losses. (The letter written by President Washington concerning this application is in the Bronck-Ely Family Papers, Vedder Memorial Library, Greene County Historical Society.) Charlotte Ely, more locally, was also the niece of Dr. John Ely of Coxsackie whose daughter, Maria, married Leonard Bronk Esq. Specific mention is made in Charlotte Ely's obituary concerning her physical beauty, her superior intellectual capacity, as well as her interest in the welfare of others.

After her daughters were married, Charlotte was drawn away from the family fireside, sometimes traveling to distant places. When daughter Emeline, married to James M. Smith of Lockport, New York, invited her to visit, she certainly must have made the trip by Erie Canal passenger barge. When son Augustus was sailing to South Carolina in November, 1844, Charlotte and other family members were on the dock at New York waving farewell. In one daughter's letter mention is made of the mother's timidity in traveling so far uptown in New York as 28th Street. Husband Joseph in his May 27 letter reminded Charlotte she should not overstay her welcome!

May 27, 1837

Madame Dear

I have I hope got the Cart before the Horse however Dear Enough, it is so Long Since I Addressed a female I have forgotten the proper designations. the mail in Sight and I must Hasten to a close. We are well. Ann and Gin [daughters] neither of them has made their appearance yet. I went to New York on Monday Evening Returned Friday morning Should have Returned one day Sooner but for having to contest a Suit with a Body without a Soul viz one of its weighmasters - *Sloaper* We are getting along very quietly Every thing goes on like Clock Work in the House and the Least Strife whatever. Augustus [son] is Well it is Very Doubtful whether he comes West this Season I do not see how he can and am pretty sure he will not - Business about the Same in New York although the money market is said to be Easier [Panic of 1837 on]. however it is tight Enough Yet in all conscience I find it so by daily experience any Ragged bill of a less Denomination than five dollars is Snatched at with avidity even Should it be a counterfeit for the purpose of making change I hope you will not fall in to the Error you have heretofore when Visiting friends or connections by Staying so Long as to make them Rejoice at your Departure

As usual  
/s/ J Sherman

P.S. Should Augustus conclude to come over Start by the middle of next month.

In a family of active, generally healthy individuals, the eldest son, Augustus (1811-1846) was the exception. He grew up at New Baltimore and for a short time appears to have owned and operated a retailing establishment on

(continued on page 38)

**Joseph Sherman** *(continued from page 37)*

lower Manhattan, selling laces, linens, hosiery and gloves. In 1837 he proposed to Elizabeth Smith of Lockport, whose brother had married Augustus' sister Emeline. It was a formal, courtly exchange of letters and permission to marry request carried on between lovers and with the future father-in-law. Unfortunately the marriage of Augustus and Elizabeth was a short one, she dying the following year. Thereafter Augustus held a financial interest in J. Sherman & Co. and owned real estate at the hamlet. The New York store was apparently short-lived. By 1844 Augustus had developed a serious case of consumption (tuberculosis). It was a time of limited medical knowledge when sufferers from consumption were encouraged to remove to the South to avoid the harsh northern winters.

In October 1844, we find Augustus transferring his interest in J. Sherman & Co. and in his brick dwelling and other assets to his father. The following month he was at New York for medical examination by a Dr. Schmidt. From there he sailed for South Carolina. This southern sojourn during the winter of 1844-1845 is documented by a series of letters which have also survived. Augustus, in them, describes his sea voyage, life in the south, mentions acquaintances made, etc. Outgoing letters from New Baltimore provide a glimpse of home life and community activities.

Charlotte, daughter of Joseph and Charlotte Ely Sherman, writes just before Christmas:

New Baltimore Dec. 23rd 1844

To A. Sherman

Your letters my dear Brother diffuse universal joy throughout our family circle, on the receipt of one every face in the house beams with delight from Ma's and Pa's to William's and Luther's in the kitchen. We received your last about two days since, and were glad to learn you were to remain in one place long enough to receive an answer, we immediately held a consultation as to who should write, the pleasing task devolves on me, and I hasten to perform it, but knowing you like to have me enter in the merits of the case at once I will begin by telling you we are all well, that is with the exception of slight colds, which are almost unavoidable at this cold inclement season. We can scarcely realize that you are amid scenery so widely different from those that surround your house, winter with its chill breath and icy fetters is indeed with us, and it seems that its reign must be universal throughout the earth but we know that it is not and we rejoice that you are in a more genial clime away from its stern influence. Your description of the fruitful orange trees and flowering magnolias made inside us a wish to be transferred to Montgomery [Alabama]. What a charming little spot it must be, and what a beautiful name. Pa was delighted with your account of crab catching and oyster gathering he immediately proposed to Ma to abandon New Baltimore and move there. Before the receipt of your last letter Ma seemed to have some vague idea that you would starve so far from home, or that you would suffer for something good to eat, for whenever we had any thing remarkably fine she would always say "Oh if Augustus was only here to dine with us to day." She has abandoned this idea and found that you enjoy delicacies that we do not dream of at this season of the year. We are most happy to learn that you have such agreeable quarters, and hope the air and situation may continue to agree with you. Your letters and papers have all come safely to hand; we get them about eight days after they are mailed. We were quite astonished to find you had heard of Capt. Mull's illness so soon. he was

confined to his room four weeks, helpless as an infant. he is almost well now and goes by every day muffled up in Pa's old plaid cloak. he made his first call here after his release from his sick room. he did nothing but laugh so delighted was he that he could use his limbs once more. Pa was obliged to be in New York several weeks in consequence of his sickness but he got along very well, much better than we expected he would. the John Jay and Shepherdess are both safely moored at our own dock and Pa and Charles are now engaged from day to day in settling. Things go on in the same prosy and uneventful style as usual in New Baltimore. there has been some snow but no sleighing as yet, consequently no rides or parties. We have singing school once a week held at the room of the young men's association. Andrew Van Slyk officiates as teacher. he does not go very deep into the science but he is a model of good nature, and he has such a powerful voice it improves me to sing with him. he is very particular to come every Sabbath morning now and lead the singing in church and our Choir has at last got to be quite respectable.

I presume you have received Emeline's letter by this time, and no doubt she has told you some news from Baltimore. I hope I shall not repeat any she has written you. This however she could not have told you as it is scarcely two days old, namely that Edward [her brother] has a fine young son. It is said to look very much like you, the grand mothers held a consultation over it this morning and have come to the conclusion that it shall be called Augustus Ely Sherman, owing to its resemblance to yourself Anna [Mrs. Edward Ely Sherman] is quite smart and Augustus is doing well. that his first son should be called Augustus, it will undoubtedly be a great favorite with Ma.

Alexander Haight has been very sick. he made a short visit home last fall and on his return to Philadelphia took such a severe cold as to cause bleeding at the lungs. Louise wrote for him to come to New York immediately where he is at present. he was getting better the last we heard from there. Dr. Schmidt I believe attends him. That was a sudden and unexpected trial to Aunt Betsey. Caroline is spending the winter with Mrs. McIlveen. Aunt Lucretia's family are all well. John, Edward and Richard are home and are to remain here till after the holidays. Victoria [sister] returned from Cocksackie yesterday where she had been spending a week. Ann and George [Keith] are well. George has resigned the post office, and Wright the Jeweler is to take it after the first of January. he said James K. Polk should not have the pleasure of firing him out of office.

George Van Santvoord was married a few days before you left which perhaps you have not heard of. it took us all by surprise here as we did not dream he was so near it. he married Miss Van Schaak of Kinderhook, a pretty and interesting girl. Aunt Lucretia invited us over to spend the evening with them before they departed to the far west, he has gone to Lafayette, Indiana, to seek his fortune and win a name, may he be successful. this is all the news I can think of at present, and now a word about ourselves. Your picture of the home scene was a true one, we often form a colony, as Cele says, round the dumb stove to talk over matters and things soon Ma leaves the old settlement in the front room and comes over to the colony and then Pa lays down his paper

*(continued on page 40)*

## TRADING POST NEEDS MERCHANDISE AND VOLUNTEERS

The idea was conceived and put into operation by the Society's former president, George W. Bagley; it has raised thousands of dollars toward the operating yearly budgets. Success speaks for itself! Plans are now under-way for the 1988 season which begins on June 26 (last Sunday in June) and continues to September 4 (last Sunday before Labor Day) - with hours each afternoon except Mondays from 1 to 4.

The regular sales plus the August clearance sale this past year have depleted the stock. Thus an appeal goes out to the more than one thousand members and other friends of Bronck Museum. As you spring clean or otherwise set aside surplus knick-knacks, china, glassware, other household items including small pieces of furniture, tools, books and other paper items, remember the needs of this museum store. Clean, undamaged merchandise sells rapidly. Trends in collecting continue to change. At present paper items of an historical nature as well as period clothing interest many collectors. (The trading post does not deal in contemporary used adults' and children's clothing, nor in electrical appliances.) Antiques and semi-antiques are rapid sellers.

Whether the sales for the day total one dollar or fifty, it is almost 100% pure profit due to the generosity of donors and the unsalaried volunteer help who staff the store. Among the workers in 1987 were Mrs. Mabel Conine, Walter and Frances Dietz, Grace Plusch, Eleanor Albright of Athens, Daniel and Kay Monahan, Olga Santora, Mildred Van Ess, Betty Gustavson, Betty Miller and Florence Hunter. (We may have missed listing a few but a "thank you" anyway.)

In addition to "tending the store," volunteers help represent the Society with visitors. They are frequently called upon to answer questions about the Bronck Homestead, a National Historic Landmark, and also recommend other historic attractions in the area. It is an opportunity to meet interesting people both from this country and from abroad.

Readers are alerted to another source of merchandise. In recent years several church organizations and individuals have donated selected items from their rummage and garage sales. Estate closeouts are another potential. A telephone call in this regard will bring a prompt response. Alert any officer of the Society. Donations may also be delivered any afternoon during the season, except Monday.

So remember - be a Friend of the Bronck Museum by volunteering an occasional afternoon of time and by "rounding up" saleable merchandise. It will be a satisfaction to you and your friends that you are helping to preserve a site that figures prominently in more than 300 years of Greene County history.

□ □ □ □ □

## A NEW BALTIMORE SEQUEL:

### Joseph Sherman (1786-1876) [Part II]

*This Spring Issue of the JOURNAL concludes the two-part article relating to the life and times of Joseph Sherman of New Baltimore. Photos for this and the previous section are credited to Valentine Kriele, Trustee Emeritus of the Historical Society.*

Slowly but cautiously Joseph Sherman continued to sell out undeveloped land as the area expanded. A study of the 1837 assessment roll for New Baltimore indicates that, together with McCabe, he held 21 acres in common, while he solely possessed "lots, houses, stores and dock" assessed at \$3,000. In the 1851 assessment roll the situation had changed somewhat. Lots, houses, store and dock were still listed but at a value of \$4,000. Additionally, Sherman now owned the brick tavern stand leased out; it was carried on the roll at \$1,000 for tax purposes. He no longer held land in common with McCabe. Son Edward and Joseph held a store property in common which they were renting out to E. S. Rundel. It is interesting to note that Joseph Sherman was listed in 1851 for personal property of a taxable nature, probably stocks and bonds. His tax bill in 1851 amounted to approximately \$30.

From the early days of the Paul Sherman involvement at the Vanderzee-Sherman trading station until that hamlet business came under complete Sherman control in 1827, the family maintained more than a casual interest in the adjoining wharf owned by Conrad Hotaling and his heirs. That property had assumed increased importance after Governor Marcy signed the grant for "lands under water" out to the channel line. Anthony M. Van Bergen had surveyed both wharfs' boundary lines in 1824.



*Sherman Homestead*

Just as Paul Sherman had turned over much of the trading and shipping interests to his son Joseph, so did the latter when son Edward proved his managerial ability. Records indicate Edward also had separate business interests apart from his father, such as those with Tunis Chaddon.

*(Continued on page 7)*



**Joseph Sherman** (Continued from page 6)

The Hotaling dock had been partially deeded to Albert Hotaling in January of 1842 and on April 14 of that same year that part was purchased by Edward Ely Sherman for \$2,000. Complete ownership came to the Shermans on January 24, 1845, when Coenradt A. Hotaling and Eliza Hotaling sold to Joseph Sherman for \$1,000 "the dock with storehouse thereon being the same conveyed by deed by Albert Hotaling to Edward Ely Sherman." Finally the Shermans were in possession of the two major wharfs at the river's edge. It had taken over half a century to gain this control.

The demand for ice in the metropolitan New York area had existed for decades but as the need increased, attention was attracted to the Hudson River ice fields upriver. It was not until the early 1850's that ice was harvested in Greene County, stored locally and then shipped during the summer months to the New York market. Joseph Sherman, Tunis Chaddon and Edward Ely Sherman are credited with being the first at New Baltimore to see the economic potential for the ice business in their area. As partners, they contracted for a storage ice building; its exact location is unknown but was on either the west bank of the Hudson at the hamlet or on Scutter's (Hotaling's) Island. Beers' *History of Greene County* states "the ice business here, as at other points along the river was commenced about 1850 when Joseph Sherman, his son, Edward E. Sherman and Tunis Chaddon erected the first ice house." Since the 1851 assessment roll does not list any ice house, and since the bills for ice house building materials and labor were paid for in 1853, it is possible the first ice house at New Baltimore went into operation during the winter months of 1853 - 1854. Robert Cutler, the local innkeeper, provided Sherman and Chaddon's workman board and lodging. His duty was to cut rough lumber for the ice house. It is documented that the sloop *Ceres*, under Captain Ira Wilson, hauled in 1236 hemlock boards for this structure at a freighting cost of \$9.27. Edward Ely Sherman furnished 185 traverse poles for \$7.40. Lewis Crandell, a New Baltimore contractor, earned \$51.95 for "labour for ice house." On December 23, 1853, George Mead put in his bill for \$65.75 for 65  $\frac{3}{4}$  days' labor on the ice house. And finally, in 1854, the Sherman daybook reads: "Tunis Chaddon Dr. to balance settlement of your  $\frac{1}{4}$  of Ice House Bill - \$1043.13." From this entry we may reasonably conclude the first ice house at New Baltimore required an investment of capital in the amount of \$4,172.52; land may have been a separate matter.

Little is known about the operation of the first ice house or of its final disposition. In 1881 Vanderpoel and Van Orden joined with Joseph's grandson, Augustus Sherman, to construct and operate a new facility for ice on Hotaling Island west of the Schodack channel. No study of ice industry in either the township of New Baltimore or for that matter in Greene County can be made without an understanding of the Sherman family's involvement. Interesting records have been kept.

The Shermans were obviously "part and parcel" of the social life of New Baltimore, especially with their several children growing up in the hamlet. Again, we get an occasional glimpse of that life from letters exchanged with members of the family living elsewhere after marriage. During the winter of 1849-1850, the youngest daughter, Victoria, in writing to her sister Ann Frances Keith at Cocksackie, complained of the dullness of the winter season, she being bored with the same old routine after having spent part of the previous winter in Albany, probably at the Albany Female Academy. Joseph Sherman is known to have paid at least one bill for such tuition.

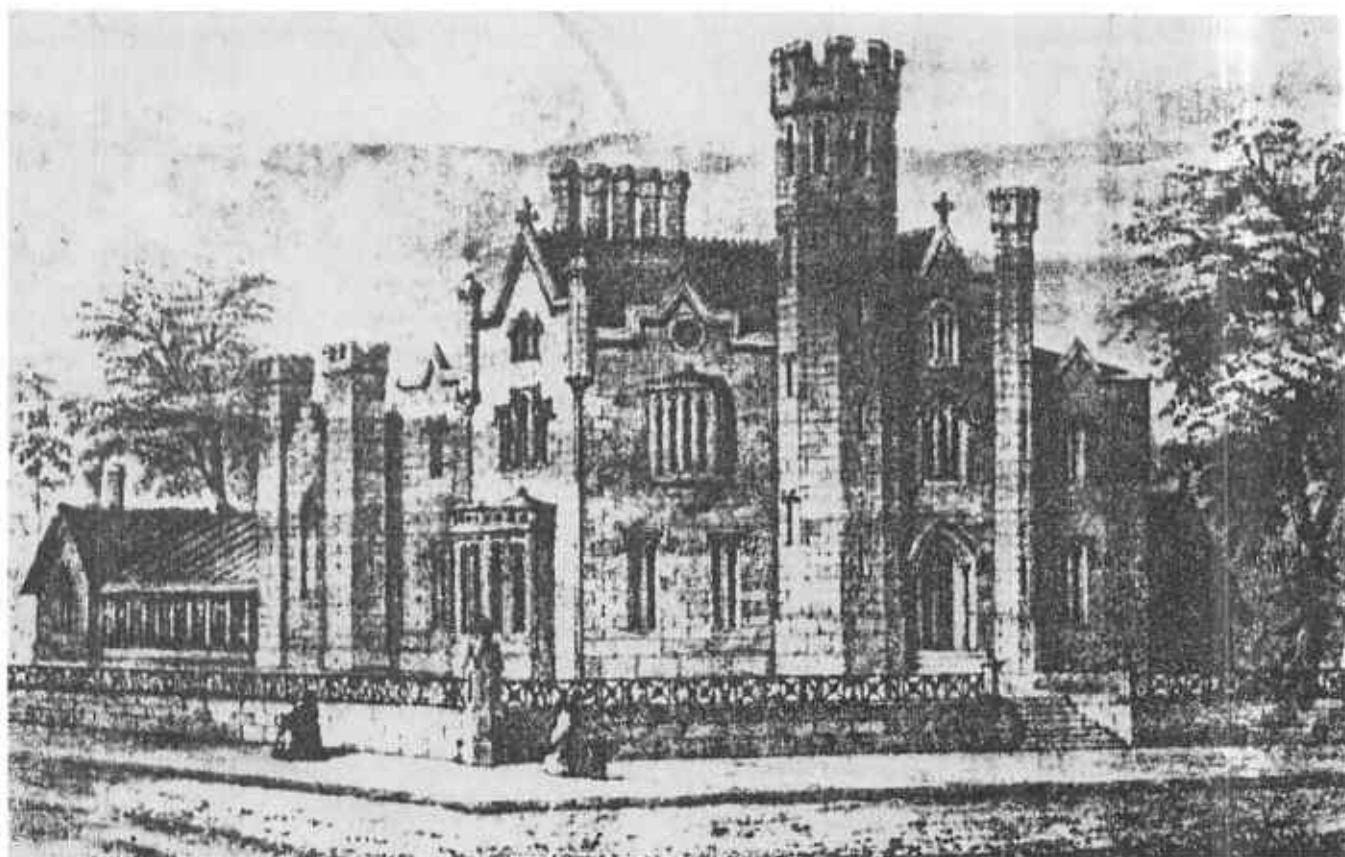
Victoria's comment concerning the grand party at the Waddell mansion in New York contains some exaggeration but is nonetheless interesting. Mrs. Waddell was a Bronk and Ely relative Charlotte Augusta Southwick McMurray, who had married money. The Waddells had one of the famous gothic style residences in that city where they entertained on a lavish scale. Frances Sherman Keith did not attend the Waddell social affair about which Victoria writes, but her husband did as did sister Cecelia Sherman. The letter written by nineteen year old Victoria to her sister Ann Frances Keith at Cocksackie, reads:

My Dear Sister

We are very glad to get your letter especially as it contained your directions - that was all I was waiting for to write to you. The letter had the effect yours usually have that is it puckered up Pa's mouth, pleased Ma and made us all laugh very much. I am very glad you are among "human beings" at last and out of Purgatory, only I wish Paradise was as near us as Purgatory is. We miss you very much and I would be willing to have the whole house turned up if you could only be here to make us laugh with your seriocomic stories. I suppose you have been over to Cairo since you wrote and have heard all the news that was sent by George Haight so that some of mine will be stale.

New Years was a very dull day here and you may think we felt lonely. Ma announced that she could not have more of her family not even Ann Frances to dine with her. I meant to stand upon my dignity and not descend to such a childish thing as hanging up any stocking. But Ma insisted upon it and so it was hung up. Pa opened his heart and put in shillings in each of the hose that hung before him so you see he is the same old not two and sixpence but twenty five cents. Ma was a better Santa Claus and gave me a nice neck ribbon and some lace. I suppose you heard there is a dancing school here this winter. A new ball room was built for it in the garret of the brick house [tavern next door] and was said to be a very good school considering. Caroline and myself visited the school last week and found plenty there such as they were. We had a great donation party here a short time ago which was held at the brick tavern. There was nearly two hundred took tea and the Dominie received \$157 besides several other things. This was doing very well for Baltimore I think. The next day there was a tea party up to Dr. Cornell's which passed off very pleasantly. But the gaiety is all over with now and life here as monotonous as ever. There has been beautiful sleighing

(Continued on page 8)



SUBURBAN GOTHIC VILLA, MURRAY HILL, N. Y. CITY. RESIDENCE OF W. C. H. WADDELL, Esq.

here for several weeks and mild beautiful weather but I have not taken so much as one ride. So much for not having any beaux. I begin to alter my opinion of them and think one would be quite acceptable. I have not had any visits from Albany as I did last year for which I am not very sorry. None of the family have been up yet [to Albany]. I do not intend to go this winter but Ma will I think. I have heard that Mrs. Parsons with whom I boarded [while attending Albany Female Academy] has the consumption. Poor woman she was too feeble when I was there to support her many arduous duties.

I received a letter from Charlotte [sister] about the same time they did in New York. I have not heard from her since. Ma and Pa have their little card parties over to Aunt Betsey's and over here. Caroline and I are very sociable and try to make the winter pass pleasantly. I am expecting a letter from Cele [sister] every day containing a description of the grand party [at the Waddell Mansion]. We are all in a fever of indignation here about it for Aunt Betsey's folks have received a letter saying that there were nearly all married ladies there and that Celia and George [Keith] were not introduced to any of the company by host or hostess. Such an insult ought not and will not be borne. I imagine I thought Sir Waddell more of a gentleman. If you see them soon give my love to them and tell them they must certainly write often. Pa and Captain Mull have just gone to Purgatory. I asked Pa what word he wanted to send to apologise for my taking french leave I think when I was there. I suppose nary.

Charlotte has become quite accomplished. Give my love to her and tell her she must improve her advantages. Remember Ann I am very lonely this winter and that you must write often. I promise to answer letters if that is any inducement. Don't let any one see this letter Ann, it is written to badly. I must leave off now for Ma has requested her pen and I am going to wish you a happy new year. Answer this letter very soon. With much love to yourself George [Keith] and the children and many wishes for a happy New Year. I remain your aff. Sister

/s/ Victoria

[The mother adds a postscript]

Dear Ann I am very much obliged to you for your kind letter. I wish you and George and all the children a happy New Year with health peace and prosperity take care of your self Good bye God bless you all is the wish of your mother

/s/ Charlotte Sherman

In other family letters either between siblings or from the daughters to future husbands, we gain additional glimpses of home life at New Baltimore in the 1840's. On March 13, 1846, Ann Frances Keith writes from Cocksackie to her sister Emeline S. Smith at New York:

Just came from New Baltimore read your letter and handed it to Charlotte, then Pa read it and then Augustus asked Charlotte to read it aloud Ma left the room in tears [Augustus was dying at the time and probably the letter concerned his health.] hope you see him again when the

(Continued on page 10)



## VEDDER LIBRARY NOTES

□◇ The oldest member of the Greene County Historical Society is Catherine Haner, Westerlo, New York. She celebrated her 100th birthday on December 10th. She is a descendant of the Vedder family and maintains a keen interest in regional history.

□◇ An extensive listing of family Bible records (16 surnames) is the contribution of Shirley A. Mearns, Genealogical Records Chairman, Wiltywyck Chapter, DAR, Kingston. The Vedder Memorial Library has numerous reasons to be grateful to her for providing copies of similar material over the past several years.

□◇ From Lloyd Loop, Saugerties, comes the marriage certificate of William A. Newcomb of Windham to Imogene O. Sanford of Ashland, dated January 9, 1868.

□◇ Individuals researching the Beatty family and related lines stemming from Tunis Cochran of Coxsackie should consult the gift of genealogical material from Mrs. Betty A. Russell, Clearwater, Florida. Copies of several family photographs are included.

□◇ More cemeteries have been copied. This past fall Kenneth Van Vechten Parks worked on the Sutton Hollow Cemetery, Route 10, Town of Ashland and also the West Settlement Cemetery in the same township. He has also completed copying Vital Statistics from the *Examiner* from the year 1891.

□◇ Richard S. Allen of Albany sends down an article on Greene County's covered bridges published in the November 1987 issue of the *Empire State Courier*. The illustrations include the High Falls bridge and the one on the Cauterskill by builder David Van Gelder. David Van Gelder merits a special article in our JOURNAL.

□◇ Mrs. Joyce Craig, Lake Park, Florida, has provided the genealogical files with copies of detailed research on her Montgomery and Brackney lines. These Irish immigrants came to America during the potato famine and eventually settled at Leeds where they secured employment in the woolen mills. Mrs. Craig is anxious to exchange information with anyone working on these families.

□◇ The *Livingston Legacy*, some 440 pages, is available through the Bard College Center for \$12.95 each. Order from the Center, Box 127, Annandale, New York 12504.

□◇ Pickney's *Sketches of Catskill* has been reprinted by Hope Farm Press but copies of the original printing are very collectible. Mrs. Hester Louise Dawson of Syracuse, daughter of the Reverend Walter E. Howe who was at one time rector at St. Luke's, Catskill, has mailed the VML her family copy.

□◇ Jacob H. Schohle, Cortland, New York, located and has shared with the VML a large photograph of the members of the NYS Pharmaceutical Association meeting at the Catskill Mountain House in the summer of 1914.

□◇ The large bindery order has been delivered by Heckman's and includes a wide variety of paper material now in more convenient form for public use.

□◇ In 1974 Laura Pine Carlson printed her recollections of the family's migration from Kiskatom, Greene County, and their settlement in Kansas. The author is a direct descendant of the Pine and Lawrence families of Kiskatom. A copy of her publication comes from Mrs. Winifred W. Fiero. From the same source comes a copy of Aidna Van Orden's *In The Blue* published by the Knickerbocker Press in 1913. Aidna Van Orden summered in Catskill and was a close friend of Mrs. Fiero.

□◇ Pre-Civil War manuscript material is always of special interest. The VML has secured, via a dealer in New Jersey, a blank stock certificate for the Canajoharie and Catskill Rail Road Company and also a bound volume containing Zadock Pratt's *The Dairy Farming Region of Greene and Orange Counties*. The account of the farm of the writer as well as the several illustrations are in pristine condition.

□◇ From Greene County Historian Mabel P. Smith has come an assortment of material including two pamphlets of historical content written by her daughter, Mrs. Barbara Smith Rivette.

□◇ Kelly's *Marriage Record of the Lutheran Churches of Athens and West Camp, New York 1705-1899*, is now on the VML shelves.

□◇ The autobiography of Henry Baldwin Hyde, one of the more famous insurance executives of the United States, comes from William J. Smith of Hudson through Mrs. Mabel P. Smith of Catskill.

□◇ Founded in 1912, the Freehold Literary Club is one of the county's older organizations. Each year it develops a series of meetings around a major theme. This year's was on the Victorian Age in Britain. A yearly mailing of their duplicated program to the VML enables us to document the activities of this cultural organization.

□◇ The Vedder Memorial Library and its parent organization, the Greene County Historical Society, are being listed in the new *Regional, State, and Local Organizations* edition of the *Encyclopedia of Associations*.

□◇ Mr. Edward Giddings of Coeymans has presented the library with a copy of the index of his volume *Coeymans and the Past*. The index is the work of Charles E. Coner of Mickilteo, Washington. Both Louise Mesinger and Raymond Beecher spent an interesting few hours with Mr. and Mrs. Giddings; he is a "treasure trove" of local history!

Joseph Sherman (continued from page 8)

river opens – fearful of never seeing him again such had going by land Charlotte and Edward help him upstairs every night but he walks down in the morning Ma thinks she will never get up as far as 28th Street [Smith residence at New York] but Pa said he knew she would be the first to visit you.

Augustus lies the greater part of the day on the settee – so patient. [Augustus died eleven days later.]

On August 12, 1851 the Shermans had a full house. In writing to her future husband, James B. Besly, Cecelia noted:

"Family gathering at the house today – all the daughters of the house – 20 happy faces at the tea table – the house has resounded with merriment all day long. Mrs. Felter [Marie Antonette] here nearly two weeks and will remain I hope sometime longer. Mr. Cook arrived Saturday last and on Sunday came Mr. and Mrs. Smith. Frank and my cousin Elizabeth – Mrs. Smith had an illness like she had last summer. She blames it on a visit to Fort Hamilton [Brooklyn]. Mr. Smith left this am and the Cooks go for a week to Rensselaerville & then other travel.

My father [Joseph] has gone East on a pleasure trip – presume he will have some wonderful fish stories when he returns. We run out on the river often and came in once after dark, causing a consternation here. Sailed down the river about 3 miles [Mrs. Cook, Mrs. Felter and Celia] and had trouble returning. Mother scolded us some she was so worried . . ."

The Shermans were never ones to die intestate, and wills were a matter of importance in disposing of worldly goods. After Charlotte's death in 1861, Joseph began to think about such matters. His first will is dated June 27, 1863 while a second one is dated December 30, 1874, two years prior to his death. In both wills he tried to recognize the needs of the several children. In the final 1874 will Joseph made specific bequests of money ranging from \$500 to \$1,000 with the surviving children sharing alike in the remainder. He noted this was in addition to what he had already done for them during his lifetime. The one surviving son, Edward Ely Sherman, was left the Paul Sherman mahogany desk which by that time had become a family heirloom. Edward was also left the iron safe, a wardrobe, and his father's gun and accouterments.

Daughters Marie Antonette Felter and Cecelia [Celia] Dibble were the inheritors of the family homestead "in which I have resided for many years." Included in their legacy were the furnishings not willed otherwise, including the Paul Sherman tall case clock now held by his great, great grandson. Marie Antonette and Cecelia also inherited the outbuildings and the garden plot. Grandson received Joseph's gold watch as a keepsake. It was a tidy will in that Joseph even provided for any descendants who desired to be buried in the family vault.

With the death of Captain Joseph Sherman on February 22, 1876, the hamlet of New Baltimore lost one of its more important citizens, one with deep roots. Daughter Emeline Smith, a frequent contributor to Victorian family publications composed the following memorial to her father:

Captain Joseph Sherman aged ninety years

After long effort, what so sweet as rest?  
After Day's many cares, the night is best.  
After a weary voyage, what ask for more  
Than a calm haven on a tranquil shore?

Such rest, such peaceful anchorage found  
By him whose name is now a hallowed sound.  
Hallowed by memories of the truth and worth  
That marks its owner's pilgrimage on earth.

Thro' all his life he walked in Honors ways,  
Thro' all his life men "named him but to praise!"  
And, far and wide, in hamlet, village and town  
His words and deeds were theme of fair renown.

Shall sorrow work the inevitable day  
That takes such venerated guest away?  
Shall hearts be wrung when breaks the sacred tie  
That stronger grows, as years on years went by?

Ah, no! tho oft, in tender moods of thought  
We may deplore the change that now is wrought,  
And miss the pleasant smile, the noble face  
That time has touched with such a solemn grace;

Yet shall we still sweet consolation find  
In one dear treasure that he left behind –  
A treasure far better than Wealth or Fame,  
Title or lands – a good and honored name.

Oft, in the quiet scenes where long he rowed –  
Beside the pleasant river that he loved –  
When friends and neighbors meet at even tide  
That name they'll speak with reverent love and pride.

"Here" will they say – and some with tender tears –  
"Here, when he dwelt well nigh a hundred years,  
He won the hearts alike of high and low  
And never lost a friend or made a foe."

Such lives are beacon lights to guide our own;  
Such lives lend comfort after they have flown;  
E'en as a long bright summer day, whose close  
Is still so fair we scarce know when it goes.

E. S.S. [Emeline Sherman Smith]

□ □ □ □ □

Greene County Historical Society  
Raymond Beecher, Editor  
Patricia Westfall, Assistant Editor  
R.D.  
COXSACKIE, NEW YORK 12051

Address Correction Requested

NON-PROFIT  
ORGANIZATION  
U. S. POSTAGE  
PAID  
CATSKILL, N. Y. 12414  
PERMIT NO. 91

ORANGE COUNTY CALIFORNIA  
GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY



# Greene County Historical Journal

A Publication of the Greene County Historical Society, Inc.

U.S. Route 9-W

Coxsackie, N. Y. 12051

Vol. 12, Issue 3

ISSN 0894-8135

Fall, 1988

## THE SHERMANS OF NEW BALTIMORE THE FOURTH GENERATION'S AUGUSTUS SHERMAN

— Raymond Beecher

His was a life of promise and accomplishment cut off by sudden tragedy. Tradition has it that New Baltimore never witnessed a larger funeral, with numerous dignitaries in attendance representing the various political, social, and fraternal organizations to which Augustus Sherman (1844-1898) belonged. It was held on October 10, 1898.

In the 1890's steamboat travel was still a major convenience for those individuals living close to the Hudson River and needing to commute or shop in the metropolitan areas such as Albany or Hudson. There were a number of these small steamers — the *Lotta*, *Young America*, *Emmeline*, and *Ramona* — moving passengers and light freight between the various river landings.

During the season of 1898, the *Lotta* schedule called for a daily run to and from Albany. For Augustus Sherman it was a convenient means of reaching his office, he serving as Secretary to the State Prison Commission. On the down-river run on an early October evening of 1898, as the captain of the *Lotta* steered for New Baltimore landing, he sighted a coal scow (canal boat) blocking the dock. Not wanting to upset his timetable by waiting for the scow to be moved, he ordered the crew to prepare for a landing farther out in the river against the scow itself. The crew were then to make a temporary plank walkway over the barge to the wharf. The captain's orders were followed and the several passengers were allowed to disembark; Augustus Sherman was the first. Crossing the emergency walkway, with dusk limiting vision, he lost his footing and plunged several feet into the partially emptied cargo hold. In an unconscious state he was carried ashore to his nearby residence to which medical attendance was summoned.

examination for skull fracture, recommended the family seek the opinion of a brain specialist from Albany, a recommendation speedily accepted by the wife and the father. Dr. Hailes came down at 9 p. m. and Dr. VanderVeer the following morning. It was their unpleasant task to inform the grieving family that death was only a matter of time. This professional opinion was fully justified, Augustus Sherman never regaining consciousness and dying on Friday morning, October 7.

As the news circulated, expressions of sympathy poured in; the funeral plans grew in size and importance. As a past master of Social Friendship Lodge F & AM and also as a masonic district deputy for Greene, Schoharie and Delaware Counties, a masonic service became an essential phase of the burial rites held on Monday afternoon. Elaborate floral pieces were a visible sign of Augustus Sherman's successful career and popularity.



Augustus Sherman's photograph taken October 25, 1897.



Funeral procession, with Masons leading, marching past the Sherman homestead - October, 1898.

ORANGE COUNTY CALIFORNIA  
GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

(Continued on page 22)

## **Sherman** (Continued from page 21)

Even the local band's services were utilized for religious music.

Several newspaper accounts of Sherman's passing survive but none was more complimentary than the Eulogy given by attorney D. H. Daley at a memorial meeting of the Greene County Bar Association held at Catskill on December 9, a Eulogy printed in the *Coxsackie Times*. This former legal partner of Augustus Sherman stressed the deceased's modest manner, and fine characteristics as a lawyer, a citizen, a neighbor, a friend, a son, a brother, husband and father. "Few men so well deserved the marks of respect." He was "a fine scholar, well versed in the classics, possessed of a finished education and great intellectual ability." Daley reminded his listeners that Sherman's "adroit analysis, quick perceptions, and logical power, always manly and straightforward, made him an excellent lawyer." It was a tribute well deserved.

Enrolled at Union College, Class of 1864, Augustus Sherman earned his Bachelor of Arts degree with the scholastic distinction of being elected to Phi Beta Kappa. He was graduated at the age of nineteen years. Selecting the legal profession as a suitable career, Augustus Sherman next spent several months of study at New York and then came back upriver to Catskill where he served a type of legal apprenticeship with the noted firm of King and Mattoon. Admitted to the bar, he first set up partnership with D. H. Daley.

Augustus, great-grandson of Paul and Bathsheba Bowen Sherman, had come to represent the Sherman presence in the New Baltimore hamlet. The Haight residence on Main Street at the foot of Church Street became the first residence of Augustus Sherman and his bride. A clipping from a September 1884 newspaper reads: "District Attorney A. Sherman is making improvements on the Haight property lately purchased by him, in anticipation of coming events probably soon to take place." He married Anna VanSlyke of New Baltimore on October 6, 1884. By inheritance in 1895 from his aunt, Marie Antoinette Sherman Felter, he came into possession of the wood-framed federal period Joseph Sherman homestead a few doors up Main Street. Thereafter he and his wife and their only child, Edward Ely named for the paternal grandfather, utilized the homestead for their residence, with Augustus' law office in the southwest front room. The son's widow, Mrs. Edward Ely Sherman, still uses the federal structure for a summer retreat, with its pleasant riverfront prospect.

As a life-long Republican, Sherman was encouraged by his political friends, such as General W. S. C. Wiley, to become an active force in town and county politics. His first elective office was that of New Baltimore town supervisor (1877-78) followed by his election as Greene County District Attorney (1884-87). During that term of office Sherman was highly praised for his handling of the case of "The People vs. Anthony Acetta and Mrs. Margaret Hanley, known as the Italian Conspirators." Although later nominated by the Republican party to run

for the State Legislature and also for county judge, it was a period of strong Democratic majorities and the times were against him. Nevertheless, when the secretaryship of the newly established State Prison Commission opened, his professional background and political connections stood him in good stead. Facing serious opposition from others seeking that appointive office, he nevertheless secured the appointment and thereafter filled the secretaryship with distinction as an able administrator until his accidental death in 1898.

There are other aspects of Augustus Sherman's business and professional career which merit attention. He was the driving force in the Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman ice house firm at New Baltimore from 1881 until its sale in 1896. At the age of 36 years, in 1881, he entered into a co-partnership with Andrew V. S. Vanderpoel and Edmund H. Van Orden to construct and operate a wholesale ice house on Scutter's (Hotaling) Island opposite the hamlet. Fortunately for historians, Sherman was a meticulous record keeper. His surviving ice papers, covering the years 1881-1896, form the best documented record of any Greene County ice house.

The wholesale ice industry was not a new activity for the Shermans of New Baltimore. Grandfather Joseph (1786-1876) and his son, Edward Ely (1817-1898), together with Tunis Chaddon, had jointly erected and operated the first such ice house in New Baltimore. They had begun filling it with river ice during the winter season of 1853-1854.

The firm of Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman first considered contracting out the entire construction project but finally concluded they could save on their investment by superintending much of the construction work themselves. To Augustus Sherman fell the task of handling legal and financial matters as well as overseeing the operational aspects of the new firm.

The Schodack Creek which enters the Hudson River at the southeast end of Scutter's (Hotaling) Island, provided the firm with a safe site, relatively free from the destructive forces of spring ice floes and high water. The island acreage was part of the investment of Vanderpoel and Van Orden as is indicated by the 1884 application to the state for a grant in perpetuity for "lands under water." An initial application had been submitted in 1881, requiring a survey, maps, newspaper advertising as well as a New York City trip for August Sherman. That portion of the investment was \$109.08. Public notice appeared in several issues of the *Catskill Examiner*, M. H. Trowbridge billing the firm \$49.30. The grant was finally approved subject to the usual conditions.

On July 1, 1881, the steam dredging machine of P. W. Myers and Bushwick, 62 Quay Street, Albany, commenced work at 6 a. m. In ten hours time they had removed enough silt to provide a satisfactory anchorage for the unloading of building materials - their bill came to \$50. That their judgment was faulty is indicated by the necessity for the ice company to turn to E. M. Payn



**Sherman** (Continued from page 22)

& Co. of Albany for additional dredging, that firm owning the *Niagara* and the *Resolute*. From August 28 when the steam dredge was towed to the site until September 23, the boat crew generally put in a ten-hour day at a cost to Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman of five dollars the hour. The final bill of E. M. Payn & Company came to \$701.25, indicating a far more extensive effort to deepen the Schodack channel ice site than that of Myers and Bushwick.

Construction supplies to build the 150 by 100 foot ice house with four storage rooms approximately 37 feet in height under beams, and with a storage capacity of 11,237 tons, began to arrive at a rapid pace in late August, 1881. The steamer *Milton Martin* of the Albany and Newburgh line delivered 20 barrels of cement. The Albany firm of Corning and Company shipped downriver canal barrows and shovels, it still being a period of manual labor. At the beginning the firm solicited from Parker and Salisbury of Cocksackie a bid for the entire stock of lumber needed; they in turn approached Millard and Collingswood. The latter was willing to submit a bid for the siding, shingles, posts, rafters, braces, studding, sills and plates of hemlock and pine, "the prices being based upon your giving us the whole order."

The three partners came to the conclusion they could reduce their substantial investment by eliminating any middleman. Augustus Sherman began ordering lumber from both local suppliers and as far away as Whitehall and Woodstock (Ulster County). To facilitate the unloading of timbers attention was first given to the completion of the dock on the island. By August 11, Walter Scott and Jacob Wentworth had hauled in 690 yards of gravel and 10 feet of rough stone. Their bill "to dock and filling in" came to \$172.50. Partner A. V. S. Vanderpoel also supplied rough stone from his local quarry - 1051 yards for dock and walls - at a cost of \$325.16.

The largest single order of timber amounting to 115,896 board feet went to H. C. Burleigh of Whitehall. The bill of lading indicates shipment by canal boat *C. J. Brunnelle* "to Port at New Baltimore." Included were 29½ M of cedar shingles. Miller Bros. saw and turning mill at Woodstock (Ulster County) filled a specialty order as did Decker and Rapp of New York, the latter "dealers in yellow pine." Window frames came from Wm. J. Traver and Son. All told, the bills for lumber amounted to \$4686.22.

Corning and Company were constantly filling orders for hardware such as carriage bolts, staples, hinges, wire and wire rope, nails and nail rods, pad locks and assorted tools at a cost of \$304.21.

With the building construction underway, attention was next given to the installation of steam power for the ice operation. The boiler and engine plus related supplies and equipment were ordered from English and Best of Castleton who earned \$4056.15. At a charge of \$48.85 Sullivan and Rice supplied the 45-foot smokestack, it being brought downriver by the steamer *Lotta*, Captain C. R. Hitchcock in charge. The finishing touch was the essential steam whistle.

With the dock and the house completed and the steam power equipment installed, the firm began to solicit bids for ice machinery. Satisfied with the quoted prices the order was split between the Catskill Machine and Foundry firm of A. & B. Wiltse, and the Athens firm of H. F. Dernell and Company. The former, who specialized in ice elevating machinery, provided a set of elevator works (\$250), 400 feet of ice chain (\$128) and special duty pulleys and other miscellaneous items. Their total bill came to \$493.03. H. F. Dernell was to supply ice elevator forgings, together with 3134 pounds of rods, bolts and washers, plus necessary hooks and eyes - total cost \$147.81. From the same Athens source came ice saws, ice hooks, canal hooks and two patented ice switch runs. By January, 1882, Dernell's bill was paid, he giving a receipt "with many thanks."

Numerous special items were milled at William H. Baldwin's shipyard and steam saw mill at the hamlet. Blacksmith James T. Turner, from September 1881 into January 1882 welded and cut bolts in addition to shoeing the horses used on site. W. H. D. Sweet provided machinist's services; G. M. Bull provided tinsmith skills while the William Fuller Company was called upon for pile driving. The unidentified masons earned \$203.39. One J. Flynn was paid \$336.75, probably for overseeing part of the construction work. By November bills were coming in for the paint and labor. C. T. Reynolds billed for two barrels of Villa brand silver grey paint used by J. Bortle. Scott & Co., ice dealers at New York, made available 80 gallons of paint at wholesale.

Coal to fire the steam boiler and salt hay to insulate the ice crop were on the order list. James R. Royce & Co. shipped 80 bales of salt hay via H. Slingerland on November 23 and another 38 bales on November 29. J. J. Vanderpool of New Baltimore, "dealer in coal, wood and lime," hauled in six tons of soft coal. The hay and coal charges amounted to \$272.13 and were chargeable against the first season's profit. Augustus Sherman, in summarizing the total payments made, from the commencing of construction work through May 17, 1882, included the figures of \$32.14 for "labor preparing ice" and \$239.93 "paid out gathering ice that first season."

The roof of the ice house fell victim to the first winter's storms. This time the partners turned to the New York Roofing Company who sent up Mr. Wayne "especially & look at damages as requested by Mr. Sherman." Repairs included 7 rolls of felt roofing cemented down with 125 gallons of adhesive; it took the roofer four days at a rate of \$3.50 the day. The dock also suffered from the spring thaw, necessitating the hauling in of more stone and fill. The Tug *Willie* earned \$10 for towing the Bt. *Johnson McCabe* and the *Leighton No. 6* for five trips between the local quarry and the ice house.

The three partners were much the wiser for a year's experience. They had soon learned they had to compete against the large, well-financed ice conglomerates. Augustus Sherman was especially alert to the costs of harvesting and marketing the ice crops. He promoted the

(Continued on page 24)

**Sherman** (Continued from page 23)

use of time cards to insure labor cost control.

Problems relating to the second season's ice crop are revealed in an exchange of letters and telegrams between Augustus Sherman and John Mulford of the Mutual Benefit Ice Company with docks at 14th Street and at 46th Streets on the North (Hudson) River and at Stanton Street in Brooklyn.

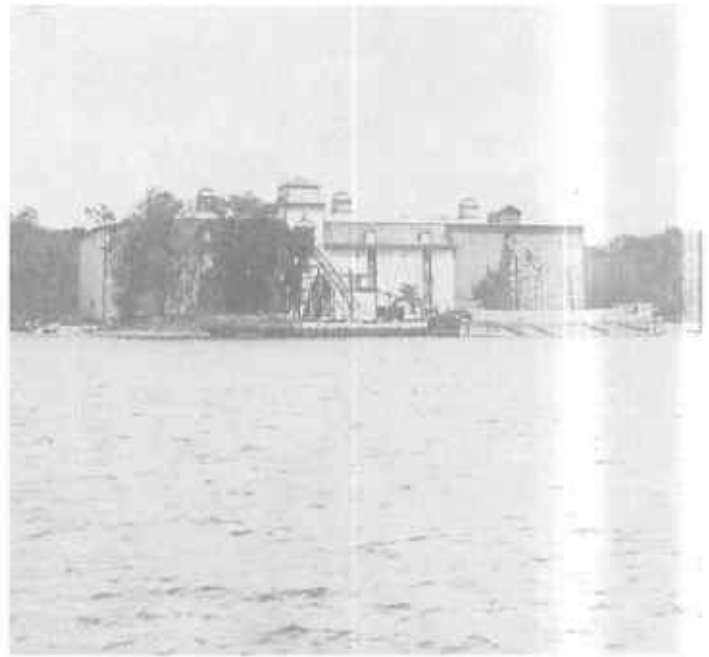
New Baltimore  
August 8, 1883

John Mulford Esq.  
Dear Sir

Your telegram of 7th received We thought from your telegram of Saturday last that a boat would be here this morning.

Although we do not yet know what weights will be returned we telegraphed you this morning to send boats "as fast as possible" being willing to risk more cargoes pending arrival of returns & hoping that the same would on arrival prove satisfactory to us If you take the rest of the ice and can possibly do so you must keep us provided with boats. It is terribly expensive having a gang of men doing nothing and under full pay We have to allow full time and you can readily see that the small amount we may realize from the ice above the expense of loading will grow beautifully & rapidly less in proportion to the number of idle days we have

Yours truly  
/s/ Augustus Sherman  
for V.V. & S.



*Vanderpoel, VanOrden and Sherman Ice House*



*The Haight house on Main Street where Augustus and wife began housekeeping - October 1884.*

(Continued on page 25)



Main Street view of the Joseph Sherman Homestead with south wing addition - second residence of Augustus and Anna V.S. Sherman. This structure is rated as one of Greene County's most architecturally attractive buildings, built in 1828 over parts of an earlier house.



A social call on Augustus' Aunts at the Joseph Sherman Homestead in 1891. L to R - Anna VanSlyke Sherman (Mrs. Augustus Sherman) her son Edward Ely Sherman, Marie Antoinette Sherman Felter, and Cecelia Sherman B. Dibble.

New York, August 11: We sent *Hager* out Aug. 8 to go to your House, by error she went to Barrytown & to my surprise I found her there on Friday A. M. and Teleg. you at once Also teleg. Powell & Co. Roundout to take *Hager* to you Today if *Sussix* [sic] is empty will send her also and if I can't get *Sussix* unloaded will if possible send you Canal Boat and *Sussix* Monday P. M. I am sorry it had happened but no fault of mine. From this time I believe you will be kept in Boats or nearly so if Ice will continue to answer for our trade as well as *Hager* did except a few cakes cloudy and snowy.

Yours truly  
/s/ John Mulford

New Baltimore, August 15: The barge *Sussex* will be loaded today and will take nearly all the ice left in the first room. With the next boat we will commence on another room. Did you make some mistake in the amount of ice in the second boat loaded? That boat had fair ice yet only 138<sup>60</sup>/<sub>100</sub> tons are returned. She ought to weigh out at least 175 tons. The *Sussex* and the previous boat have a little clouded ice. When the *Sussex* arrives you will then know just how the ice will run having the contents of one room.

We hope you will have a boat for us in the morning.

Please send us weekly a statement of the Tonnage of the different boats rec'd. as we want to know whether we are getting enough to pay expenses of loading or not. From your experience in the business you are doubtless aware that we can get very little more than the expense of putting in the boats at the price we get and with bridge weights but of course we must be thankful for small favors this season. All we can say is to be as liberal as you can on bridge weights.

If convenient to you we should be glad to receive a check on account this week.

Yours truly  
/s/ V.V. & S.

Mutual Benefit Ice Co. New York August 16:

Please receipt and return. This will pay for 3 Boats. *Hager* was short one full corse [sic] & 12 cakes of second corse so she will weigh much less.

The *Blanch* weighed out previous load 150 tons.

We would prefer you have some one at our weigh office to superintend the weighing. Canal boats are poor things for Ice & it wastes fast. We will send tomorrow *Hager* & next day will send *New Castle* similar to *Sussix* but stows less. Next week will send you one of our large barges. Ice moves slow. We must have some hot weather soon. We will not send any more canal boats unless pushed by heat. Our Mr. Spenser is careful and watches tonnage close.

/s/ J. Mulford

Unlike the first year, in 1883 Sherman now had three wholesale ice customers. Scott & Company took ice worth \$1089.31, F. E. Bear a small order of \$93.08 while the Mutual Benefit Company took "the old ice" for \$2902.28. From the last sum, J. E. Langin was paid \$1479.77 for "taking out the old ice from the house." Sherman estimated the firm earned 21 cents per ton on the old ice but since they had to pay Langin 21 cents per ton for removal,

there was little or no profit on it. Scott & Co., interested in the new ice crop, paid 30 cents the ton — their measurement was 3619 tons.

Almost a decade later, June of 1892, George V. Brower noted "the proposition of Messers Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman dated June 22, 1892 — for Sale of their ice in ice house at New Baltimore at eighty five cts. per ton is hereby accepted — pursuant to the terms of said proposition." Prices had risen!

Promissory notes were more financially secure than book accounts but the September 26, 1893 note of John Scott for \$962.40 was protested on December 29 for non-payment. On February 27, 1894, Scott was writing "I find it impossible to give note for less than four months which brings it well into the warm weather; by that time there will be plenty of money coming in and no difficulty to meet the same. Hoping that this may be satisfactory. I endorse note with interest included and remain Respectfully yours" /s/ Jno. Scott.

Ice houses were always vulnerable to fire and necessitated adequate insurance coverage to protect investments. Over the decade Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman carried policies totaling \$4500. These were issued by the German-American Insurance Company of New York and the Niagara Fire Insurance Company of the same place. At least for one period of time the firm of Greene and Bedell of Coxsackie acted as their insurance agent.

The one record to have survived for real estate taxes on the ice house site is a receipt dated September 14, 1891, signed by John Burlingham, collector. That school tax amounted to \$15.91.

Equipment was repaired or replaced at intervals. In the winter of 1888-89 John N. Briggs "patentee and sole manufacturer of the Briggs' Corrugating Elevator Plane Self-Holding Snow Scraper, Lowering Gig and Chip Melting Pans and dealer in Ice Elevating Machinery, Ice Tools, etc." sold the ice firm \$180 of such equipment. Elias Gates of Coxsackie, manufacturer of the Champion snow scraper and the Champion crust breaker, delivered a snow scraper at a cost of \$30.

Unlike some of the larger houses who paid in ice scrip tickets which merchants took in lieu of cash, Augustus Sherman paid the men in cash. Each week he utilized coin envelopes.

By 1885 the ice dock required new pilings. That work, at a cost of nine dollars, was provided by Albany's William Fuller & Co., located at "74 Pier Street, foot of Columbia." The old pilings were pulled and new ones were driven into the creek bed. Oak was used, costing 12 cents the foot. The Albany firm was back again in August for two days of pile driving and filling in the dock with gravel — that bill came to \$78.15.

The first roof repairs of 1882 lasted until October 1892 when C. R. Rabe of Albany and Hudson covered the ice house roof with #10 John's asbestos at a price of \$666.00. That price was quoted with the understanding that the ice men would remove the old layers. Like all other bills, Sherman paid this one promptly.

(Continued on page 27)



**Sherman** (Continued from page 26)

The winter's ice crop of 1890-91 went to the Yonkers City Ice Company. That contract was signed at New Baltimore on June 29, 1891 and reads:

This agreement made this day between Vanderpoel, Van Orden & Sherman, partners of the first part, and the Yonkers Ice Co., party of the second part,

Witnesseth—

For and in consideration of mutual agreement herein contained, the party of the first part hereby agrees to sell to the party of the second part, the Ice contained in their Ice house situated on Scutter's Island, on the west side of Schodack channel, at the price of Sixty cents per ton, of forty-five cubic feet to the ton, to be measured July 7th 1891, and to be paid for as follows:

Five Hundred Dollars on the signing of this contract, and the balance in two notes of equal amount, dated at measurement of Ice, and bearing interest at six per cent, one to be a three months note, and the other a four months note, and the said notes shall be endorsed individually by Edward Lawrence and Wm. J. Clark.

/s/ Vanderpoel, Van Orden & Sherman

/s/ Yonkers Ice Co. — Wm. J. Clark,

Treas. & Manager

By the year 1896 Augustus Sherman had reached the age of 52 years. Competition kept increasing as the ice companies merged into large combines. The partners felt the time had come to "sell out." The buyers were Hyer and Watson of Brooklyn. On March 28, 1886, these two men signed a contract with Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman whereby the parties of the first part agreed to sell and convey their ice house on Scutter's Island, the tools and machinery and the ice stored in the ice house for the sum of \$15,000. The down payment was \$5,000 with the balance being due on or before October 1, 1896, with interest from the date of sale. Included in the agreement was the lease held by Augustus Sherman for other acreage on the island. The New Baltimore partners reserved the right to use the ice dock to load produce and wood from the island at such times so as not to interfere with the ice activities. The sale concluded Augustus Sherman's ice career. His share of the selling price was \$5,000.

The Hudson River ice houses, including those in the township of New Baltimore, were an important source of cash income for local families. Ice employment was at its highest during the coldest winter months when farm chores were at a minimum. While pay was low, usually \$1.50 to \$2.00 the day for unskilled labor, those dollars had far greater purchasing power.

The use of time cards was the first step in preparing the Vanderpoel, Van Orden and Sherman weekly payroll sheets. Four weeks' payrolls survive for the time period between mid-February and mid-March, 1889. An analysis of these records maintained by Augustus Sherman indicates 101 men and boys received cash envelopes. Most came at the first call for ice hands and remained until the rooms were filled. Henry Trenchard was one of the higher wage earners since he brought his team of horses while Thurlow Davis did equally as well directing the hoisting

operation. Workers names and the number of weeks worked in 1889 are:

<b>A</b> Allen, William	1	<b>N</b> None	
Atkins, Archibald	4	<b>O</b> None	
<b>B</b> Bailey, Fred	3	<b>P</b> Phelps, J. B.	2
Bailey, N.	1	Powell, Henry	1
Bailey, Thaw	2	Powell, Millard	1
Baldwin, Hezekiah	1	Provost w/team	1
Boice, Jacob	1	<b>Q</b> Quinn, Stephen	2
Bouton, Elwood	1	<b>R</b> Reynolds, Isaac	1
Brent, Willis	4	Reynolds, Levi	4
<b>C</b> Chapman, R.	1	Reynolds, Richard	4
Clow, Albert	1	Richmond, Charles	1
Clow, William	1	<b>S</b> Salisbury, William	1
Cole, E. S.	1	Scott, Frank	1
Conrad, Aug.	3	Schubert, Fred	3
Conrad, Phil	4	Seaburgh, David	1
Cross, Geo.	2	Seaburgh, Frank	2
<b>D</b> Davis, Thurlow	2	Seaburgh, Richard	4
Dawson, Edgar	1	Sharp, George	4
Decker, Arthur	3	Smith, Judson	1
Dederick, Frank	2	Smith, William	1
Deyo, Arthur	1	Snyder, Abram	4
Deyo, Lansing	2	Snyder, William H.	3
Deyo, W.	1	Sperling, William	1
<b>E</b> Engle, Charles	4	Sutton, Albert	4
Engle, Peter	4	Sutton, John	2
<b>F</b> Fish, William G.	4	Sutton, Lorin	3
Fisher, Lewis	1	<b>T</b> Tompkins, Charles	1
Fletcher, John	1	Tompkins, Isaac	1
Franken, John	2	Trenchard, Charles	1
<b>G</b> Gage, Austin	4	Trenchard, Henry	
Gage, D. H.	1	& team	4
Gardner, Clarence	1	<b>V</b> Van Alstyn, William	4
Garrett, Ormand	1	Vanderpoel, Fred	3
Green, Ambrose	4	Van Woert, William	3
Grogan, Alonzo	4	Van Zandt, J. H.	4
<b>H</b> Hilton, B. F.	?	Vincent, Hiram	4
Hoffman, David	4	Vincent, Reuben	4
Hoffman, George	3	Vincent, William H.	1
Hotaling, William	1	<b>W</b> Wagner, Arb.	1
Houck, Edward	1	Wheat, John R.	2
<b>I</b> Ingalls, Vern	4	Wickes, A. L.	4
<b>J</b> June, David	4	Wilsey, Frank	2
<b>K</b> None		Wilsey, Joseph	1
<b>L</b> Layton, William H.	3	Wilsey, William	4
Lisk, LeRoy	2	Winegard, P. J.	3
Loughton, Thomas	4	Winn, Orson	?
<b>M</b> Mansfield, George	1	Witbeck, Stephen	4
Mansfield, Robert	1	Wolf, George	2
McCabe, John	2	Wolf, Henry	4
McCardell, Andrew	2	Wright, George	4
McCardell, Charles	1	<b>XYZ</b> - None	
Mead, Charles	4		
Mead, Lorin	4		
Mosley, Fred	1		
Murphy, ———	1		

(Continued on page 28)

(page 27)

That Augustus Sherman continued to practice law and sell insurance on a small scale in addition to his secretaryship of the State Prison Commission is indicated by a surviving letter from W. A. Jones of Fishkill: "I hear that your client, Edward McCabe's new ice house on Schodack Creek is nearly completed. I sincerely trust that you will secure the risk [sell the insurance policy] for your sake as well as mine. Kindly let me have a line from you regarding it, and oblige."

—The year 1898 was one filled with sorrow for surviving Shermans. Augustus' accidental death in October was followed in rapid succession with two others – Augustus' father, Edward Ely Sherman, died on November 17 and Augustus' brother, bachelor Joseph passed from this life on December 18th. To Augustus' widow, Anna Van Slyke Sherman, it meant managing on a greatly reduced income and attempting to maintain a home for 8-year-old son, Edward Ely, named for his grandfather. The mother lived to March 17, 1935 and the son to January 26, 1981.



*Joseph Sherman Homestead - earliest known Hudson River View (engraving).*



*Augustus Sherman as a young adult.*



*Anna VanSlyke Sherman at age 16 years.*



TABLET ON PUDDING ROCK, PORTSMOUTH, RHODE ISLAND



Newport Historical Society

# A NEW ENGLAND HERITAGE

The 500-year Story  
of my line of the  
**SHERMAN and MAURAN**  
Families  
1420 to 1920

by  
**F. BARREDA SHERMAN**

Published by  
R F Publications, Inc.  
San Francisco, California

sum of three shillings and  
the Priest celebrate for my  
soul, for the space of four  
the church at Diss while  
and eight pence and the  
was to be aided by  
of malt apiece. These  
godchild received the sum  
of the decline in  
reign of Henry VII.

also in Diss and Yaxley. He  
the daughter of Thomas  
daughter, Margery – and  
died in 1504 and his will  
years old, should inherit

apparently responsible for  
fortunes and definitely  
He also lived in Yaxley  
attorney-at-law with a large  
and 1546 and as church  
allegiance to the King of  
a wealthy man, possessing  
Beyden and Bessingham and  
day. A manor, incidentally,  
only part of a village. It is a  
one, i.e., by long continuance  
Thomas' ownership of these  
had lived in this area for

of John Waller, Esq., of  
were sons and all, except one  
1551 when he died and was  
those days – and certainly a

much better one than that enjoyed by Henry VIII whose years coincided almost exactly with Thomas' and none of whose six wives could give him a sturdy son.\* As to our Sherman mother of ten, I call attention to a recently discovered item in Appendix D vividly illustrating her redoubtable character.

#### IV HENRY 1524-1590

The fourth son of Thomas was our ancestor HENRY SHERMAN, born in 1524 some thirty miles south of Yaxley in Colchester, County Essex. With him there came a change in the type of life and possibly in the social position of our line of the family for he is termed not "Gentleman" but "Clothier". Perhaps he adopted this calling because, as a fourth son with nine brothers, he received a relatively small share of his wealthy father's estate and thus had to abandon the life of landed proprietor and seek a new method of maintaining and increasing what he had. So he turned to that great British staple – wool, whose export after the Black Death bought the food so desperately needed for common survival and whose vital importance to the nation is memorialized by the Woolsack beneath the Lord Chancellor's high seat in the House of Lords. Henry, however, did not deal in raw wool but as a Clothier became a pioneer in a new type of enterprise based upon it.

At about this time the Craft Guilds were becoming outmoded. Since the days of the Romans and Saxons the housewives of County Essex had spun their woollen yarn, taken it to the weaver who wove it into cloth and passed it on to the customer right in the same town. It was all local. But now demand was broadening, markets were expanding, and goods manufactured in one town were sold in another or across the Channel. The adjoining counties of Suffolk and Essex were good "sheep country" and the skill of the Flemish weavers who, fleeing from religious persecution early in the fourteenth century, sought refuge here, had helped to make this area one of the richest parts of England. Served by rivers running down to the Channel ports, this was an ideal site for the development of the woollen cloth industry from the back of the sheep to the finished goods which were carefully baled and loaded on a cart or stowed aboard a ship for transportation to the city merchant.

However, the local craftsmen were not in contact with the consumers in the expanding market and now men were needed who had a knowledge of this market plus the capital to finance operations during the period required to process and distribute the wool from sheep to shop. So there

\*An item in "Annals of Medical History", December 1921, p. 316, mentions "Richard Sherman, M.D. of Caius College (Cambridge University), 1567" who may quite possibly have been the second son of this Thomas Sherman.



occurred what might be termed a Preliminary Industrial Revolution and the capitalist-employer-distributor, the "entrepreneur", came into being. In the woollen cloth trade he was the "Clothier".

As competition grew, individual Clothiers stamped each bale of their goods with their distinctive trademarks. Some dyed their cloth in their own "woadhouses" where it was colored blue with the juice of the fermented leaves of woad – a plant used by our more ancient British ancestors to paint their bodies.\*

Controlling production and distribution from raw wool to finished cloth, the Clothier and his fellows in other industries became important factors in the economic community and obtained more influence and power in local and national government.

Henry Sherman had the capital, the intelligence and the initiative to benefit from these developments. He, his sons and his grandsons were Clothiers for at least a century and I have one document showing that Shermans were still in the same business in Essex in 1895. Though Henry had been born in Colchester, he carried on his trade in Dedham which is in County Essex a few miles north of his birthplace. Being on the River Stour only about fifteen miles upstream from the important port of Harwich, Dedham may have been better than Colchester as a shipping point for the goods produced by the Sherman enterprise. The business occupied "Sherman's Hall" which stands today as do numerous other ancient buildings of the Essex Clothiers. This Hall – still bearing our family name – is just across the street from Dedham's church and, like many other old houses in the town, it boasts a charming Eighteenth Century facade added two centuries after the construction of the original edifice.

Henry's wife was Agnes Butler and she gave him five sons and two daughters. Their eldest son, also named Henry, was our ancestor; their second son, Edmund, was the ancestor of General William Tecumseh Sherman. But when Henry died in Dedham in 1590 at the age of seventy his will left £20 to his son Henry and his armor to his sons, Henry and Robert (who was a physician) while Edmund, ancestor to a general, apparently had to go unarmed – or maybe he already had a full suit of his own. In any event, it is probable that all three sons armed themselves as best they could and rode down to the coast in July of 1588 to help repel the expected invasion by the dreaded Spanish Armada. But, thanks to Howard, Drake, Hawkins and the stormy seas, they had no need to unsheath their swords.

\*This plant (*Isatis Tinctoria*), now extinct in England, can be seen in the gardens of The Cloisters in New York City.



*Charles Seely, A.R.P.S., Dedham*

SHERMAN'S HALL

Dedham

V HENRY 1545-1610

HENRY SHERMAN, second of the name, was born in Dedham in 1545. Like his father he became a Clothier for, more important than the L20 and the armor, his father bequeathed to him "my Shearman's crafte" and added: "I give to Henry Shearman, my son, all the household which is in his house which he hath already". Thus it seems that he was already living and working in "Sherman's Hall" and there he presumably lived and worked throughout his life.

At the age of 23 he married Susan Lawrence and, not to be outdone by his prolific grandparents, he and she produced seven sons and four daughters. The second son, Samuel, was our ancestor, and the fifth son, John, was the ancestor of Hon. Roger Sherman, signer of the Declaration of Independence for Connecticut. Henry and his wife died within two weeks of one another, perhaps of the same malady, and their wills were probated on the same day, September 12, 1610. Both are buried in Dedham.

VI SAMUEL 1573-1615

SAMUEL SHERMAN, the last of our line to be a Clothier and the last to live out his life in England, was born in Dedham in 1573 and was baptized in the parish church on January 11th. In about 1597 he married Philippa Ward and they had four sons and three daughters, at least two of whom died young. The three sons who lived to maturity were Samuel, Henry and our ancestor, Philip. Samuel and Philippa are believed to have lived for a time at Dedham but the exact location of their home is not known though a number of houses still standing in the village belonged to the Sherman family. However, they spent a considerable part of their lives at Ardleigh, one of Samuel's properties near Dedham, and there he died when he was still in his early forties.\*

Samuel's will, probated on March 2, 1616, mentions three sons and his daughters, Mary and Martha. At the time of their father's death his eldest son, Samuel, was only fourteen, and his youngest, Philip, only five so they were obviously unable to carry on their father's business. Eventually all three sons decided to leave England and come to America, Philip being the first to arrive in 1632-3.

Why they made this decision, we do not know but we can consider the factors - economic, political and religious - which may have impelled a move so important to us descendants of Philip, who are now spread across North America from the Atlantic to the Pacific.

\*One of Samuel's sisters, Phebe, married Simon Fenn and their descendants lived at Ardleigh until recently but their line has now died out.



*Painting in The Victoria Museum*

THE VALLEY OF THE STOUR  
WITH DEDHAM IN THE DISTANCE

*by John Constable*

In 1558 when Henry Sherman, the first of our line to become a Clothier, was thirty-eight years old, Elizabeth I came to the throne. Under her England engaged in no impoverishing wars and in general the country prospered, but prices rose following the import of bullion from America and the debasement of the currency and this hurt the landowners whose rents were fixed. In order to maintain their standard of living, they had to mortgage their estates and borrow from the merchants who were benefitting from rising prices. Thus land passed from the old nobility to the mercantile class and it seems not improbable that the Clothiers got a fair share of it though many of them also had their problems as they often had to borrow money to finance their expanded operations.

While Elizabeth reigned, the country enjoyed relative political stability but when she was succeeded in 1603 by James I and the latter in 1625 by Charles I, there arose a basic conflict between Parliament which represented the people and these two kings who believed that they were responsible only to God and not subject to the Law. One example of this conflict was the 1628 "buyers' strike" of the London merchants who were enraged by King Charles's imprisonment of Sir John Eliot, a member of Parliament who had propounded the principle of ministerial responsibility with which the King strongly disagreed. The London merchants thereupon refrained from buying or selling for six months. It can be seen what a serious effect this could have on the country's trade and particularly on the business of a Clothier who had borrowed heavily to buy and process wool in the reasonable expectation of selling the finished cloth in nearby London.

Against this background of political conflict, the eastern and south-eastern counties (including Norfolk, Suffolk and Essex) were suffering a severe economic depression. The prosperity of this area was now largely based on the cloth industry and when in 1625-1630 this business went into a heavy decline, the results were disastrous. Unemployment rose, there was not enough food, and poor relief had to be doubled. Difficulties and unrest spread to all classes.

Tied closely to the economic and political problems were the basic religious differences between the King and many of the people over the organization and ritual of the Church of England. The so-called Puritans wished to "purify" the Church of everything which resembled in any way the "pagan practices" of the Roman Catholics and they were also horrified by the excesses of the Royal Court. (The Parliamentary Army under Cromwell which finally overthrew Charles I was, in effect, an army of Puritans.)

We have seen that Samuel Sherman died in 1615 when his three sons were too young to manage his estate and, knowing how serious were the problems that faced his business in the ensuing years of economic distress

and political turmoil, we can imagine that by 1632 young Samuel, Henry and Philip were casting about for a way to better themselves. What more promising way could be found than to take ship for New England where they could be free of the growing and incalculable exactions of the government and, in due course, have a chance to own their own land?

Also, the area in which they lived was one where Puritanism had taken its strongest hold and the leaders of the Puritan movement at home and in the New England colonies were bound together by ties of blood, marriage and neighborhood so the Shermans knew that by joining their friends and relatives and going to Massachusetts Bay they would be moving to a community whose religious beliefs and practices would accord with their own ideas. As far as Philip is concerned, this factor must have played an important part, for his life in America shows that he took his religion seriously and was willing to make sacrifices in order to follow the dictates of his belief.

So take ship they did and were part of the twenty thousand English who migrated to the New England Puritan colonies between 1630 and 1640. Due to the above mentioned economic and religious factors a large percentage of these came from the eastern and southeastern counties, and from these counties they brought to their crude pioneer settlements the names of the tidy towns and villages they had left behind - Dedham, Hingham, Boston, Cambridge, Stamford, Ipswich and many another which have now become as much American as they are English.\*

Among the emigrants in the sixteen-thirties were five other Sherman descendants of Philip's great-grandfather Henry who had founded the family business. Two of these returned to England to resume their former occupation as clothiers; the other three decided to remain in the New World and today practically all "authentic" American Shermans (i.e. those who did not adopt the name) are descended from our ancestor Philip and his brother Samuel or from those three cousins - "Hon. Samuel", "Capt. John" and another John. Of these cousins, "Hon. Samuel" founded the Connecticut family of which General William Tecumseh Sherman was a

---

\*In this migration came the first American Ripley and Clement ancestors of my wife, Cornelia Ripley Sherman. William Ripley of Wymondham in Norfolk, about fifteen miles north of Diss and Yaxley, sailed for Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1638 with his wife and three children on the "ship 'Diligent' of Ipswich, John Martin, master". (Ipswich is only ten miles from Dedham and Philip and his brothers may have sailed from the same port.) Robert Clements came to New England in 1642 with most of his family. He was a well-to-do man from Ansley, about ten miles north of Coventry in central England, and was one of the small group which founded Haverhill, about twenty-five miles north of Boston.

member and "Capt. John", who settled first in Watertown, Massachusetts, was an ancestor of Hon. Roger Sherman, signer of the Declaration of Independence for Connecticut.

So much for our branch of the Shermans in England; now let us turn to Philip, the first of our own line in America.

### III

1610 - 1687

PHILIP SHERMAN

and

THE FOUNDING OF RHODE ISLAND

#### ( PHILIP 1610-1687

PHILIP SHERMAN was born in Dedham, County Essex, on February 5, 1610, and, as we have seen, he joined the great Puritan migration to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1632 or 1633 when he was in his early twenties. Soon after his arrival he was married to Sarah Odding, daughter by a former husband of Margaret Porter, then the wife of John Porter. They were probably married by the minister of the church in Roxbury, of which congregation Philip was then a member, and the young couple established themselves in that community (now part of central Boston just south of Back Bay). Here, within the next three years, the first two of their thirteen children were born, a son, Eber, and a daughter, Sarah. Their fourth son, Samson, born in 1642, was our ancestor.

On May 14, 1634, Philip was "admitted freeman", his name appearing on the list next after that of John Haynes, Governor of the Colony. The "freemen" constituted the Colony's "General Court" (i.e., General Assembly) which met quarterly to consider and act upon matters of importance and elected annually a Governor, a Deputy-Governor and a Board of Assistants (later called Magistrates). The General Court was empowered to make "such rules, laws or ordinances as should not be repugnant to the laws of England", a requirement which in later years was honored more in the breach than in the observance.

In 1635, Philip visited England, being absent for about a year. In those days one did not hazard a trip across the Atlantic for pleasure so he must have gone on business, perhaps to aid in the settlement of his father's estate and to obtain funds which would establish him more securely in the New World. It seems not improbable that the three brothers then sold their business and properties and that Samuel accompanied Philip on his return to America. At any rate it is recorded that Samuel came to Massachusetts Bay in 1636-7 and settled in Ipswich. In May 1637 he was also admitted freeman, an indication that both he and Philip were regarded as responsible citizens and good members of the church. (Of the third brother, Henry, I know only that he died in Boston in 1651.)



### Anne Hutchinson and her "Covenant of Grace"

After returning to Roxbury Philip became involved in the "Anne Hutchinson troubles", a religious controversy which was to disrupt the community and to bring about his banishment and removal to Rhode Island. It seems incredible that this dispute could arouse such violent emotions and lead to such severe punishment but religious doctrines were then paramount in Massachusetts Bay and many were to suffer torture and death at the behest of the all-powerful Ministers of God.

Anne Hutchinson and her husband, William, were a prosperous Boston couple and were members of the First Church whose "teacher", Rev. John Cotton, had been their much-admired pastor in England. At this time she was a vigorous woman of about thirty-seven years and had acquired a considerable influence among others of her sex, primarily because of her kindly spirit and helpfulness in sickness. But, more important, she had a strong religious instinct and a remarkably well-developed controversial talent and was "wonderfully endowed with the indescribable quality known as magnetism". Also she may have been overly forceful in expressing her opinions.

It had been her custom to hold Thursday meetings in her home for women who had been unable to attend the church services of the preceding Sunday and she there rehearsed the sermons they had missed and began before long to compare the teachings of the various preachers. She thus evolved the doctrine that certain of them preached a "Covenant of Grace", i.e. a religion based on a direct revelation in the individual soul of God's grace and love; while others preached a "Covenant of Works", a religion founded upon a covenant between God as judge and man as fallen which all men should obey unquestioningly and of which *the minister was the official interpreter*.

At the Hutchinson home there was much discussion of these two "Covenants" by both men and women -- including Philip and Sarah Sherman -- and, strongly influenced by Mrs. Hutchinson's cogent arguments, many of those who gathered there espoused the doctrine of a Covenant of Grace.

The whole policy of the Massachusetts Bay church and state was then based on the over-riding influence and authority of the clergy which would have been dangerously undermined by this doctrine. Thus the more powerful church leaders became seriously alarmed as a substantial and growing number of their parishioners found in it a joy and peace for which they had sought in vain in the harsh tenets of the established doctrine of law and judgment. In fact, the Covenant of Grace had won over almost all the Boston church members.

In March 1637, after sundry questionable political machinations, Mrs. Hutchinson's brother-in-law, Rev. John Wheelwright, who had preached a

Covenant of Grace, was convicted of "sedition and contempt". A petition denying his sedition was presented to the Court, signed by sixty members of the Boston church, including Philip and Samuel Sherman as well as many men who had occupied official positions. These signers were publicly rebuked by Governor John Winthrop and on November 2, 1637, Wheelwright was sentenced to be disfranchised and banished, refused the privilege of an appeal to England and given fourteen days to settle his affairs before setting out for New Hampshire.

Two years earlier the Rev. Roger Williams of Salem had also been banished for being an exponent of religious toleration and declaring that the power of magistrates should be limited to civil matters. These ideas of "separation of church and state" and "soul liberty" (akin to the Hutchinson-Wheelwright Covenant of Grace) were more than the clergy could stomach.

Banishment was a harsh sentence. The banished man -- with his family -- had to return to England or brave the perils of the wilderness, abandoning his home and his major possessions, especially his land, the ownership of which had been an important goal in his coming to New England. Thus banishment was in many ways the most greatly feared whip which the theocratic oligarchy held over the backs of their people.

Under the laws inspired by this oligarchy, no one could appeal the verdict of a court, no one could enter or leave the Colony without permission of certain specified officials, no one could vote without belonging to the church and no one could join the church (though church attendance was compulsory for all) without meeting conditions which were difficult to satisfy. In brief, the leaders of the New England church set up a tyranny more complete than that of the bishops of the Church of England from whose domination they had fled to America. Considering the surprising fact that at least three-quarters of the population of Massachusetts Bay were not members of the Puritan church and thus had no voice in their government, one wonders why they submitted for so long to the dictation of their clerical masters. However, these masters were supported by their loyal factions, by a well organized police force and by a sincere conviction of their Divine Mission and their own righteousness.

Thus upheld and further emboldened by the fact that Massachusetts Bay was the most powerful colony in New England, they also sought to take territory from their neighbor colonies and adopted an arrogant attitude towards them and even towards their Mother Country. In England there was much criticism of Massachusetts Bay policies but the home country was so preoccupied with her own problems, i.e., the Civil War, the Protectorate, the Stuart Restoration, war with Holland, etc., that punitive action by the British Government was delayed for many years.

Immediately after the clergy, controlling the court, had brought about Wheelwright's banishment, a number of the signers of the petition protesting his conviction were disfranchised, some were removed from public office and on November 20, 1637, seventy-five citizens accused of having been "seduced" by Mrs. Hutchinson's "opinions and revelations" were ordered to surrender to the authorities "all such guns, pistols, swords, powder and matches as they shall be owners of" and to refrain from purchasing or borrowing any to replace same. Philip and Samuel Sherman were included among those named in this order—which was loyally obeyed by all concerned, most of whom were church members and freemen.

A new law was then promptly passed providing that anyone who should "defame" any Magistrate or Court or any of their acts or proceedings should be fined, imprisoned, disfranchised or banished.

Naturally the authorities had not neglected Anne Hutchinson and she was brought to trial for having broken the Fifth Commandment ("Honor thy father and thy mother . . .") by bringing reproach upon "the fathers of the commonwealth". On November 2, 1637, she was convicted and sentenced to banishment "as being a woman not fit for our society". She asked: "I desire to know wherefore I am banished", and Governor John Winthrop replied: "Say no more; the Court knows wherefore and is satisfied".

The civil authority having condemned her, it was now the turn of the religious body to take formal action. Broken in spirit by imprisonment and isolation, she recanted the most extreme of her doctrines, saying they arose from "the height and pride of her spirit". But this availed nothing and in March 1638 she was excommunicated in the First Church of Boston, the church where she had so often worshipped with such deep zeal and sincerity. Listen to the words of the presiding Minister; they reflect vividly the point of view of the Puritan leaders of the time:

"Therefore, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the name of the church, I do not only pronounce you worthy to be cast out, but I do cast you out; and in the name of Christ I do deliver you up to Satan, that you may learn no more to seduce, to blaspheme and to lie; and I do account you from this time forth to be a Heathen and a Publican and so held of all the brethren and sisters of this congregation and others. Therefore, I command you, in the name of Jesus Christ and of this church, as a leper to withdraw yourself out of the congregation!"

As Anne Hutchinson turned from the altar to walk down the aisle past those who for years had been her co-worshippers, one of her followers in the congregation had the courage to step out, take her arm and walk out of the church with her. This was a young woman named Mary Dyer; twenty-four years later she was to be hanged on Boston Common.

Today, in front of the State House and facing that same Common there stand two statues honoring these women — Anne Hutchinson's dedicated to "A Courageous Exponent of Civil Liberty and Religious Toleration", Mary Dyer's inscribed with her own words: "My life not availeth me in comparison to the liberty of the truth". But in 1638 with the convictions of Williams, Wheelwright, the "leper", Anne Hutchinson, and their followers, "the voices that had pleaded in Massachusetts for religious toleration, for civil liberty and for a religion of love were silenced. The intellectual life of the colony ceased to be troubled and entered into peace but it was the peace of death . . . In England, Puritanism had been grafted on a national stock of abundant sturdiness and health. In the forests of America, uncultured and ungrafted, the wild fruit grew steadily more gnarled and bitter..\*\*

#### Departure from Massachusetts Bay

Philip and Sarah Sherman and the other followers of these silenced voices were now forced to consider what they themselves should do. Following the excommunication of Anne Hutchinson, they were well aware that they were regarded as Enemies of the Church as well as the State and would thus be prohibited from worshipping God as their consciences dictated. They were forbidden to protest or appeal any sentences that might be passed upon them and, deprived of their arms, they were unable to defend themselves against physical attack. Clearly it behooved them to move from Boston and vicinity as soon as possible. While a few "repented of their sins", Philip and Sarah joined the majority who preferred exile to repentance.\*\*

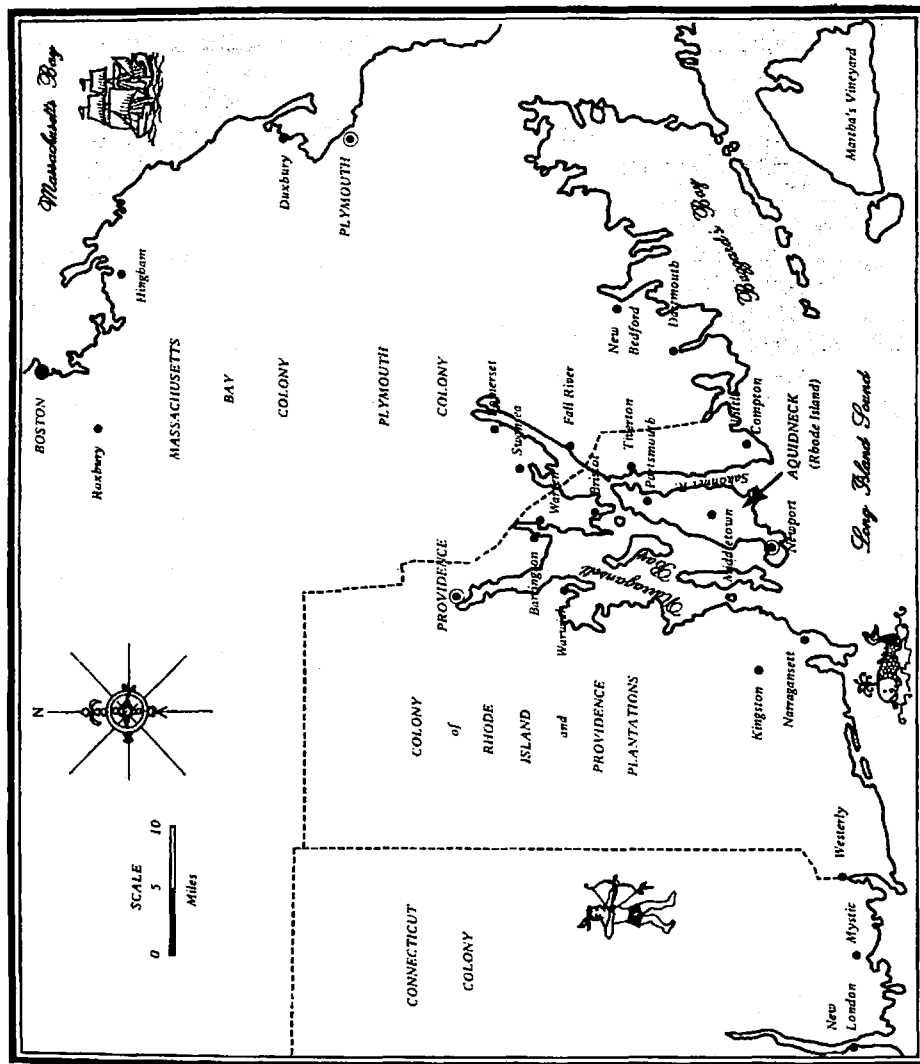
Among these were Margaret and John Porter (Sarah Sherman's mother and stepfather), Anne Hutchinson and her husband, William (a former Deputy and Judge of the County Court), Mary Dyer and her husband William, John Coggeshall and William Aspinwall (both former deacons of the First Church and Deputies to the General Court), William Coddington (a former "Assistant", Judge of the County Court and Colonial Treasurer) and, perhaps most important, Dr. John Clarke. This last played so vital a part in the founding of Rhode Island that some description of him is essential to our story.

Though only twenty-nine years old, he was already a man of classical learning and accurate scholarship and, being both a Doctor of Medicine and a Doctor of Divinity, he was probably the best educated man in this

---

\*From "The Founding of New England" by James Truslow Adams.

\*\*I have no record of what happened to Samuel Sherman, except that he married, had at least three children (Philip, Martha and Nathaniel) and died in Boston in 1643.



Outline Map  
of  
SOUTHEASTERN  
NEW ENGLAND  
showing  
the towns  
mentioned  
in this  
narrative

group. A native of County Suffolk, he had obtained his degrees from the Dutch University of Leyden in the liberal community which from 1607 to 1620 had been the home of the Pilgrims of Plymouth. He accepted the doctrine of the Calvinistic Baptists who affirmed the right of all men to religious liberty and the duty of obedience to lawful government and, having come to Boston in the midst of the dispute about the "two Covenants", he naturally sympathized with the adherents of the Covenant of Grace. His person and his personality combined to make him a natural leader; he was tall, stalwart, enthusiastic, with a judicial mind, a calm temper, and a bold and resolute will.

Dr. Clarke proposed that the exiles-to-be should seek a place of refuge for the establishment of a community based on the ideals of civil and religious liberty. This proposal having been approved, he and certain others were requested to search for a satisfactory location outside the jurisdiction of any existing colony. Finding the territory to the north too cold, they went south and, after learning that the site first selected was within the boundaries of Plymouth Colony, they enlisted the aid of Roger Williams, by then settled near what is now Providence, in finding a suitable location and purchasing it from the Narragansett Indians who controlled that area. Williams, a liberal and kindly man, had maintained most friendly relations with the Indians and with his help Dr. Clarke and his associates were enabled early in 1638 to purchase the island of Aquidneck (Rhode Island) from the Sachems, Canonius and Miantonomi.\* The purchase price was forty fathoms (two hundred and forty feet) of white beads and a deed was drawn up by Williams in favor of "Mr. Coddington and his friends" and was signed by the two Sachems on March 24, 1638. A second agreement provided that, having been given ten coats and twenty hoes, the Indians would remove themselves from the island before winter. There were also subsequent payments of beads, wampum, coats and hoes, in order to satisfy the demands of all interested parties, to obtain the privilege of cutting grass and trees on the nearby mainland, and to ensure the prompt removal of all the Indians. All in all, the total price paid was very, very low but Aquidneck was only a small part of the land controlled by the

\*According to J. F. Willison's "Saints and Strangers", Dr. Clarke believed that Aquidneck might also be included within the ill-defined boundaries of Plymouth Colony and, in order to prevent any possible future dispute, he requested the Pilgrims' formal permission to settle on the island. This they granted "considering that they (the exiles) were their countrymen and fellow-subjects that were thus distressed and destitute of habitation although they held their errors in as great dislike as those from whence they came."

Narragansetts, they had no conception of the value of what they were selling, and the Rhode Island colonists – like all the rest of the English – took advantage of the situation.\*

The island of Aquidneck – some sixteen miles long and five wide at its widest point – lies about fifty miles south of Boston and runs roughly north and south between Narragansett Bay on the west and the Sakonnet River on the east. Its fields and forests – heavily wooded with oak, pine and maple – sloped down gently from the center to the shore on either side, its soil was good for farming and grazing, there were plenty of clams along the beaches, fish in the adjoining bay and river, deer in the forests, and wild fowl in the air above. Truly Dr. Clarke and his companions had selected a lovely spot for their new settlement.

How did the Narragansett island of Aquidneck come to be renamed for an island in the far Mediterranean? This change stemmed from a letter written in 1534 by the explorer, de Verrezano, to his master, Francis I of Italy, reporting that, after visiting what is now New York harbor, "weighing anchor, we sailed fifty leagues toward the east, as the coast stretched in that direction . . . ; at length we discovered an island of triangular form, about ten leagues from the mainland, in size about equal to the Island of Rhodes . . ." This has been identified as Block Island in the Sound about twenty-five miles southwest of Newport but the early settlers, having read this letter in "Hakluyt's Voyages" applied the name of Rhode Island to Aquidneck. Roger Williams so referred to it in a letter written in 1637 and in 1644 the name was formally adopted by its residents.

Meanwhile, back in Boston, the leaders among the men who were to settle Aquidneck had felt the need for a formal agreement incorporating themselves into a "Body Politick". Accordingly, they had drawn up and subscribed their names as follows to the historic document known as The Portsmouth Compact – a worthy successor to the more famous Mayflower Compact.

\*In terms of English currency wampum fluctuated in value with the changes in the value of beaver skins. The "forty fathoms" paid for Aquidneck was probably worth between five and ten pounds sterling. Roger Williams wrote John Winthrop in June 1638: "...a thousand fathoms would not have bought (the island) by strangers. The truth is, not a penny was demanded ... what was paid was only gratuity, though I choose, for better assurance and form, to call it a sale."

## THE PORTSMOUTH COMPACT

The Seventh Day of the First Month 1638\*

*We whose names are underwritten do hereby solemnly in the presence of Jehovah incorporate ourselves into A Body Politick and as He shall help, will submit our persons, lives and estates unto our Lord Jesus Christ, the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords, and to all those perfect and most absolute laws of His given in His holy word of truth, to be guided and judged thereby.*

*Exodus, 24c, 3:4  
II Chron., 11c., 3  
II Kings, 11:17*

William Coddington	John Sanford	John Walker
John Clarke	Edward Hutchinson,	Richard Carder
William Hutchinson, Jr.	Jr., Esq.	William Baulston
John Coggeshall	Thomas Savage	Edward Hutchinson, Sr.
William Aspinwall	William Dyre	X
Samuel Wilbore	William Freeborne	Henry Bull, his mark
John Porter	Phillip Shearman	Randall Holden

The Biblical references apparently reflected the spirit and intent of these men. Here they are:

Exodus  
24c  
3:4

"And Moses came and told all the people the words of the Lord, and all the judgments: and all the people answered with one voice, and said, All the words which the Lord hath said we will do. And Moses wrote all the words of the Lord, and rose up early in the morning, and builded an altar under a hill, and the twelve pillars according to the twelve tribes of Israel."

\*1. e., March which, marking the end of Winter and the coming of Spring, was then regarded by the English as the first month of the year. In 1752 the English Parliament finally decided to "get in step" with Europe and ruled that the new year should start on January first; also that 11 days should be dropped in order to bring the English calendar into agreement with the Gregorian calendar, then termed "New Style".



II Chronicles

11c

3:(4)

"Speak unto Rehoboam, the son of Solomon, King of Judah, and to all Israel in Judah and Benjamin, saying: Thus saith the Lord, ye shall not go up nor fight against your brethren; return every man to his house; for this thing is done of me. And they obeyed the words of the Lord, and returned from going against Jeroboam."\*

II Kings

11c

17

"And Jehoiada made a covenant between the Lord and the king and the people, that they should be the Lord's people; between the king also and the people."

On the day when the Compact was signed there was held the "First Election by Freemen", William Coddington being chosen chief executive with the title of "Judge".

Ten signers of the Compact, Philip Sherman among them, had been given permission to leave Massachusetts Bay with their families but on March 12, 1638, the colony's General Court issued a summons against them, ordering them "to appear (if they be not gone before) at the next Court, the third month (May), to answer such things as be objected." Happily by that time they had "gone before" and it was too late for the Puritan oligarchy to subject them to any further penalty except formal banishment, which sentence was promptly passed upon them and their families, even to Philip's children, then aged two and four.

The exiles left Massachusetts Bay early in the Spring of 1638, one party following the Indian trail through the forests while the rest went by sea, rounding Cape Cod, sailing up the Sakonnet River and landing on the eastern shore of an inlet near the northern end of Aquidneck at a location then known by the Indian name of Pocasset and subsequently re-named Portsmouth by the new settlers. The two parties being rejoined, they set up camp not far from the shore in a hollow near the stream - now called Founders Brook - which empties into the river near their landing place.

#### Settlement and Organization of the Colony on Aquidneck

Philip Sherman had now made his second big move in five years. The first was to a well populated, established and "civilized" community and he was responsible only for himself; the second was to virgin territory

---

\*To this quotation from II Chron, I have arbitrarily added the fourth verse without which it is meaningless. It is conceivable that the inditer of the Compact wrote "4" in error after the reference from Exodus instead of after II Chron. as the fourth verse is not essential to the significance of the former. F.B.S.

surrounded by Indians and having few white settlers and he was now responsible not only for a wife but also for two small children with a third (Peleg) "on the way". Philip was indeed one of America's earliest "pioneer fathers" as Sarah was one of our earliest "pioneer mothers". But they were young, they had learned much in their years in Roxbury, they were with a sturdy and cooperative band of men and women whom they could trust, and they were sustained by a strong faith in their God and by a strong desire to worship Him according to the dictates of their own hearts. They were ready and able to "start from scratch".

First of all they had to provide temporary shelters - possibly tents or circular bark-covered Indian houses or daub and wattle huts like those erected by the Pilgrims at Plymouth seventeen years earlier.\* This temporary housing may have provided shelter but it did not provide much comfort. William Coddington wrote later to Governor Winthrop of Massachusetts Bay: "....I was not willing to live in the fire of contention with you and others....but chose rather to live in exile and to put myself upon a sudden removal....to a place without housing;.... What myself and wife and family did endure in that removal, I wish neither you or yours may ever be put unto."

The location of this first primitive encampment has been identified and if you are in the neighborhood you can readily drive to the spot. Just after crossing the Mt. Hope Bridge on Route 114 to the island, bear left down the hill on Boyd Lane and near the point where Anthony Road runs into the lane on your left, turn right across a farmyard and drive up an unmarked woodland road with willow trees overhead and a tiny stream - Founders Brook - running beside you on your right. This road soon ends at the edge of a little meadow marked by a low rock - "Pudding Rock", so called because its rounded surface encrusted with pebbles reminds one of an English plum pudding.\*\*

Here it was that Philip and Sarah and their companions drew water from the nearby stream, built their fires for cooking and warmth, and rolled themselves in their blankets in the chill nights of those first weeks

---

\*Early settler Samuel Gorton wrote, "They made a Cave or Caves and in them lived until the cold Winter was past," but Aquidneck's gentle slopes do not seem to me to lend themselves to caves - natural or excavated. Perhaps Gorton meant an early type of dwelling consisting of a six-foot deep pit, shored up with wood, floored with planks and roofed with bark or green sods laid upon supporting spars. F.B.S.

\*\*These instructions are given in detail because there are no roadside directional signs and my wife and I found our way only through the help of a Tiverton waitress whose Portuguese-American father owns the only farm on Founders Brook. See Portsmouth map, page 77. F.B.S.

## WHERE RHODE ISLAND COLONY WAS FOUNDED



*The Road to the Encampment Site  
Founders Brook on the Right*



*Here the Founders made their Camp  
Pudding Rock in the Center  
(As photographed in 1966)*

on Aquidneck. And today Pudding Rock bears a bronze plaque inscribed with the Portsmouth Compact and the names of its signers under the words:

1638-1936

*Erected to honor the memory and perpetuate the spirit and ideals of the founders of the first government in the world to allow and to insure to its citizens civil and religious liberty. Established on this site in the year 1638.*

The founding of such a government was important but first of all the settlers had to provide the necessities of life — food and shelter. It was promptly decided that each man should be allotted land for house and farm provided he built a habitable dwelling thereon within one year. The great majority — including Philip — met this requirement though a few failed to do so and lost their land. Even though these first "habitable dwellings" were rather small and crude — many of them being no more than one or two-roomed frame cabins with a huge fireplace at one end — it took a lot of hard work to build them and to clear the potential farmland around them. Trees had to be girdled and felled and the resultant logs split and sawn and as the stony fields were gradually cleared they had to be tilled by mattock or spade. Crops had to be planted and firewood laid up. Beyond this it was necessary to dig wells for most of the farms because there are no large streams on the island. These wells, about thirty feet deep, were lined with stone and many of them are still in use today, their sides as straight and true as ever.

Inasmuch as they had been given formal permission to leave, the property of the exiled group had probably not been confiscated by the Massachusetts Bay authorities and the new settlers must have sold their houses and land in the Boston area. Thus they had equipped themselves with much of what they needed to establish their new homes and farms and had brought with them horses, cattle, sheep, etc. These now had to be protected from Aquidneck's bears, wolves and foxes but on the other hand the island's deer provided a good supply of venison. This, plus the wildfowl, fish and shellfish, was most welcome as, in those first years, the need for milk, wool and eggs and for an increase in their livestock were too important to permit much slaughter of their cattle, sheep and chickens.

The labors of that first year on Aquidneck were not eased by the fact that in June the island was shaken by an earthquake and in August was hit by a hurricane which struck twice in six hours and raised the tide fourteen or fifteen feet above the ordinary spring levels. In December there was an unusually heavy storm with strong winds and deep snow.

The first general town meeting had been held May 13, 1638 in Portsmouth and thirteen signers of the Compact were present, including William Coddington, Dr. John Clarke, John Coggeshall, John Porter, William Hutchinson and Philip Sherman. At this meeting the location of the town was set "at the Springe"; the situation of the Meeting House was agreed upon; it was ordered that "every inhabitant of this Island shall always be provided of one muskett, one pound of powder, twenty bullets, and two fathoms of match, with Sword and rest and Banelices, all completely furnished"; and it was decreed that "None shall be received as inhabitants or freeman or plant upon the Island but such as shall be received in by the consent of the Bodye, and do submitt to the Government that is or shall be established, according to the word of God."

It is impressive to note the efficient manner in which this new settlement was organized. Town meetings were held frequently and regularly and the recorded decisions give us a picture of the settlers' life and problems in those early months. Here are some of the results of these meetings:

Home lots of six acres were laid out; lands were surveyed and allotted for farms and a price of two shillings per acre was set; one half to be paid "presently", the balance in three months.

A treasury was established, public funds being provided from sale of land.

Town officers were selected as were also sergeants for the armed "Traine Bands" and the latter, consisting of all males aged sixteen to fifty, were required to report for "a general day of Trayning for Exercise in the arte of military discipline."

A tavern was provided where "beere" might be brewed and wines and other "strong waters" bought and sold. (This was strategically situated adjacent to the Traine Band's drill ground.)

Highway surveyors were chosen and highways laid out.

Town meetings were called by the "beate of a Drumm" and any freeman who was absent, was late or left before close of business "shall forfeit twelve pence."

A prison, a whipping post and stocks, were erected and a Town Constable and Town Sergeant were appointed. (Eight

persons were shortly thereafter arraigned for "a riott of drunkenness" and put in the stocks.)\*

A five-rail fence was ordered built across the north end of the island to protect livestock from Indians and wild beasts and a tax was levied to pay for it.

Three citizens were appointed to purchase venison from the Indians at three pence per pound, to sell it at four pence, to pay one half penny to the Treasury and retain the balance.

A windmill and a water mill were erected and a town baker was appointed to provide corn bread and rye bread. (A municipal baker was a boon for the housewives as the baking of bread in the early Colonial house was difficult if not impossible.)

At a later meeting it was ordered that swine be sent "away from the Plantation six miles up into the island or unto some Islands adjacent....or else be shut up that they may be inoffensive to the Town." (The Narragansett Bay island eventually selected still bears the name "Hog Island".)

Philip Sherman was allotted a "house lott" and two hundred acres of land to be farmed. This comprised an irregular strip running from what is now the East Main Road (Motor Route 138) between Hedley Avenue and Stubtoe Land down the slope to the shore of the Sakonnet River. In the ensuing years Philip's sons, Peleg, Samson and Samuel, and his grandson, Joh, acquired considerable additional acreage to the west and happily a good portion of these Sherman farmlands still stands in the family name, being owned by our cousin, Arthur A. Sherman, of Portsmouth, a descendant of Peleg.\*\*

The cultivation of his farmland and the construction and subsequent improvement of his "habitable dwelling" were arduous and lengthy tasks but somehow Philip also found time and energy to serve Portsmouth in

\*Sixteen years later the Portsmouth meeting ordered also "that a dropping (ducking) stool shall be made and sett by the water side by the ponde". This was probably intended for the punishment of scolds but apparently it was never used.

\*\*The boundaries of this acreage in Portsmouth owned by Philip, his three sons and his grandson are now marked on the north by Hedley Avenue, on the south by Stubtoe Lane, Middle Road and Mill Lane, on the west by West Main Road and on the east by the Sakonnet. See map, page 77.

many official capacities for which he was chosen by the Town Meetings. Sometimes he acted alone but usually as a member of a committee, for when every man had to work long hours it was deemed wise to divide among as many citizens as possible the duties required for the orderly operation of the community. From "Early Records of the Town of Portsmouth" we learn what positions Philip held while that first struggling little settlement grew to be part of a colony of several towns and thousands of inhabitants:

Town Clerk .....for thirteen years .. 1644 - 1657  
 Town Recorder ..... in 1650 and 1651  
 Councilman ..... seven times ..... 1650 - 1673  
 Tax Assessor ..... thirteen times ..... 1651 - 1684  
 Surveyor of Cattle ..... twice ..... 1648 and 1672  
 Town Auditor ..... three times ..... 1656 - 1668  
 Magistrate ..... in 1656  
 Deputy to General Court  
 (Assembly) of the Colony .. three times ..... 1656 - 1667  
 Grand Juror at the Colony's  
 General Court of Trials ..... in 1660  
 Lotter (allotter) of  
 Town Lands ..... various times... starting in 1638

*Town Clerk.* Using goose or turkey quill pens and ink which was probably home-made, Philip recorded meticulously and clearly the decisions of Town and Council meetings, made copies of land transfer documents and performed the lesser duties of his office, receiving therefor an annual salary of one pound. His entries can still be seen in the book in Portsmouth's Town Hall. Each page pressed between transparent pieces of silk, these town records are now probably the oldest and best preserved in our country.

*Town Recorder.* Apparently concerned primarily with land ownership records.

*Councilman.* The Town Council was the administrative body which carried out the policies set by the Town Meetings.

*Tax Assessors.* To meet its own expenses and its share of those of the expanding colony, Portsmouth levied taxes based primarily on livestock and committees of four to six men were chosen as assessors.

*Surveyors of Cattle.* In the early years all the livestock ran loose on the common grazing land fenced off on the northern part of the island,

Tracing of the handwriting of Philip Shearman

W<sup>h</sup>at<sup>e</sup> 7<sup>th</sup> (1655) The Councell of the towne of  
 Portsmouth being mett according to the law of the collonie  
 for the legal Disposing of the estate of John Wood Deceast ...  
 Philip Shearman

May the 7th (1655) The Councell of the towne of  
 Portsmouth being mett according to the law of the collonie  
 for the legal Disposing of the estate of John Wood Deceast ...

Philip Shearman



ownership being indicated by "ear marks".\* The ascertaining of ownership was doubly important, first, because when the animals returned to the farms for the winter each owner was entitled to his proportionate share of the natural increase, and second, for purposes of tax assessment and the recording of animals shipped off the island.

*Town Auditors.* Committees were chosen periodically to audit the Town's accounts and in 1668 a special group, including Philip, was named to clarify old records of tax payments and expenditures.

*Deputy to General Court and Grand Juror.* Citizens were elected to represent Portsmouth in the Colony's legislative and judicial bodies.

*Lottery (or Disposers).* These laid out the land allotted to the new "free inhabitants" as they were accepted by the Town. Boundaries not always being too clearly defined, Philip Sherman was one of the four chosen in 1659-65 to consider, confirm and record disputed land titles. In 1686, as his last official act, he served on a committee ordered to recommend a method for distributing the Town's undivided and "common" land.

From time to time Philip was also called upon to perform sundry "odd jobs". One of considerable importance was his appointment in 1674 to a committee to determine what freedom and privileges should be enjoyed by individuals who were admitted to the Town as freemen but were not in fact free born. His ability as a surveyor caused him to be chosen in 1683 to help "Lay out the high way two rod wide beginning at the Sea Side on the Norwest Side of this Island and so to run...to the Land Layd out to Ralph Earl...to be accomplished as speedily and conveniently as may be."

In 1669 the Town ordered him to prosecute his neighbor, William Almy, for fencing off the public road to a spring and, when Almy was found guilty after two years of litigation, to make sure that the offending fence was indeed removed. But perhaps the most "human" of his assignments is shown by the following decision of the Town Meeting of April 16, 1657:

"It is consented to by Vote that Thomas Schreiff (Shreve) hath libertie to sitt doune for the present upon that house plott that John Porter hath given him liberty to sit doune upon for present: upon his wifes peacabl and good behaviour towards hir neighbours: untill he can more conveniently provide for himself or the toun take further order concerning them:

"Mr. William Balston, Philip Shearmaan and Mr. John Briggs are apoynted to speake With shreifs wife and William Charles and George

---

\*"Ear marks" were distinctively shaped cuts and the earliest available record of one for our family describes a "duble V on the left Eare" allotted to Philip's son Benjamin on June 1, 1674. Branding was not then used.

Lawtons Wife and to give them the best advise and Warning for their own peace and the peace of the place."

What would we not give for a tape recording of the "converse" between these three sober committeemen and Mrs. Shreve and the Mesdames Charles and Lawton! However, the "advise and Warning" seems to have been effective for Mr. and Mrs. Shreve remained in the tight-knit community and in later years their son was chosen to be a constable and a trial juror.

All in all, Philip served the Town officially in at least thirty-five of his forty-nine years in Portsmouth and in fourteen years he served in more than one capacity, occupying in total more than two-thirds of the positions for which men were normally chosen by the Town Meetings.\* The record of his public service shows that he had enjoyed a relatively good education and was a fine mathematician and that his fellow-citizens esteemed him as intelligent, trustworthy and fair; certainly he was dedicated - so dedicated, in fact, that one wonders how his fields were ever tilled or his crops harvested. To aid him in these labors he was probably able to hire men among the steady influx of new settlers and in due course he had the help of his eight sons. By 1660, for example, these ranged in age from ten to twenty-six - and farm boys start to work as soon as they can carry an egg in from the nest or drive a cow to be milked.

Now let us give thought to the equally arduous activities of Philip's wife.

#### Sarah Makes a Home on the Sherman Farm

Our history books are full of the names of men who killed other men, overturned governments, made laws, discovered new lands, invented new machines, etc., etc. But let us not forget the women and especially let us in America not forget those who went with their men into the wilderness, risking - and often suffering - death from starvation, disease, Indian attacks and other perils. They were there, caring for their husbands and raising their children, and while we value our Sherman family name, we can take satisfaction also from the knowledge that in our veins there flows just as much blood from the Sherman wives - Sarah Odding, Isabel Tripp, Amy Spencer and all those who followed them.

---

\*The tradition of service to Portsmouth has been maintained by his descendants. Richard Sherman, Jr., served as Town Clerk for twenty-nine years (1823-35 and 1844-61) and that office is occupied today by Arthur A. Sherman who has served continuously since 1942. Also Town Clerks Abraham Anthony (1784-1821) and Philip Anthony (1821-3) may have been descendants of Philip as there have been numerous intermarriages between the Sherman and Anthony families.

Sarah -- the first of these -- now with two small children and a third about to arrive, had somehow to make a new home in the wilderness. This required a great deal of ingenuity, especially in the early months while they were practically "camping out". Later, after the first houses were built, she would be able to settle down to the customary labors of the Early Colonial housewife. What did these entail?

First of all, she had to prepare food over an open-hearth, wood fire -- a fire which had to be kept going all the time, summer and winter. The heavy cooking pots and kettles were of iron and one, suspended by a crane over the burning logs, was always full of hot water for which there was a never-ending demand. This meant never-ending carrying of water from well, spring or stream. To supplement field crops and meat, vegetables were needed from the kitchen garden which the housewife had to hoe, weed and plant and to maintain this garden she had to pick, sort and keep the seeds needed for next year's planting. Also, to add zest to her meals, which might be roasted venison, a fat eel, or a stew of rabbit, woodchuck or bear meat with ground nuts and wild Jerusalem artichokes, she picked grapes, barberries, strawberries and huckleberries. She lacked the facilities to preserve the berries but the grapes could be pressed for vinegar, and other fruits, especially pumpkins, could be preserved by drying. For warm drinks she brewed "coffee" of parched acorns and "chocolate" of hickory nuts.

After plucking and "drawing" the fowls, Sarah had to separate the feathers -- the softer for pillows and mattresses, the coarser for hearth brushes and fans for the fire. She skimmed the cream off the pans of milk and she churned the butter. She preserved meat and fish by smoking or packing in salt. In the early years light at night was provided by burning pine knots but later Sarah made candles from the tallow that she saved.

Whenever she could, Sarah searched in meadow and forest for the plentiful duck eggs and for the green herbs and other plants which she hung on the attic beams or spread on the floor, filling the house with a pleasant, aromatic odor. Herbs, barks and roots were also the basis for many household remedies and a stock was always kept on hand.

"Cleanliness is next to godliness" and it was Sarah's responsibility to keep the cooking utensils and dishes and clothes and bedding clean and to provide the means whereby she and her family might also be kept clean. That required soap and this she made by rendering the fat she had saved and using lye from the fireplace ashes. Bathing was done in a big wooden tub of hot water in front of the kitchen fire.

And who was there but Sarah to supply and mend the clothes? Her spinning wheel, her loom and her needle were in use whenever she had time for them and her knitting needles, too, for caps and mittens. Rag rugs

and patchwork quilts were made of any fabric that could no longer be worn.

Beyond all this were the children -- children to bear, to rear, to care for in illness with home-made draughts and poultices. And year after year there were more -- thirteen in eighteen years, i. e., an average of one every sixteen months. Here they are with the years of their births:

Eber	1634	Edmund	1641	Hannah	1647
Sarah	1636	Samson	1642	Samuel	1648
Peleg	1638	William	1643	Benjamin	1650
Mary	1639	John	1644	Philip	1652
		Mary (2nd)	1645	(who was a daughter!)	

Of these thirteen children the first Mary died young and William died at the age of three; all the rest married and in due course presented their parents with at least sixty-nine grandchildren, a firm foundation for their family's line in the New World.

Philip and Sarah were conservative in the choice of their children's Christian names. They might, like others in the colony, have selected such names as Freegift, Freelove, Endcome, Restcome, Epenetus, Howlong, Preserved, Resolved, Experience, Silence, Question, Friendship, Toleration, Horrid, Idido, or even Mahershalalhashbaz. But to us their only unusual choice seems to be Philip for their youngest daughter. However, in those days both girls and boys often bore that name.

Sarah's fecundity set a pattern for many Sherman daughters and daughters-in-law in the generations that followed and by 1910 the late Mr. James Lewis Sherman, a great student of our family genealogy, had located thirty thousand direct descendants of Philip and Sarah -- and was finding more every day. My nephew, Anthony Gromme, an eminent mathematician and skilled computer programmer, can no doubt tell you how many more of their descendants have been added in the last half century.

During the very early years the families of Aquidneck had been faced with more than their usual share of difficulties and problems. The settlers were threatened with famine in 1639 and two years later, just when they were becoming more firmly established, they suffered a cold summer and had growing weather for their crops, followed by a very severe and stormy winter with much ice on Narragansett Bay. This unhappy experience was repeated in 1642 and 1643 and the supply of corn -- the staple of the Colony's diet -- fell to a frighteningly low level. Adverse weather was not the only threat. Wolves attacked the livestock and the deer; black caterpillars destroyed much wheat and barley; and in the summer of 1643 the wild pigeons, which used to darken the skies of America, descended

upon the fields – sometimes as many as ten thousand in a flock – and “beat down and ate up a very great quantity of English grain”.

Those had been hard years and particularly hard for men like Philip Sherman who had not been reared as farmers or journeymen.

**Newport is Founded  
Union of Newport and Portsmouth  
Rhode Island is Established**

While Sarah was bearing and rearing children, the population of Aquidneck was also being increased by the arrival of settlers from England who were dissatisfied with the restrictions imposed by the Massachusetts Bay authorities and were attracted to the newer community where the influence of the resident clergy was wholly on the side of freedom. In fact, in the years 1640-1660, Massachusetts Bay's population increased only 70% while in Rhode Island the increase was 400%.

During the first year on Aquidneck the settlers had had an opportunity to explore the island more fully and had found at the southern end an excellent harbor with fertile soil and good residential sites in the adjacent area. Attracted by these advantages, several of the original group decided to move and in the spring of 1639 Dr. Clarke, Governor Coddington, John Coggeshall, William Dyer and some others left Portsmouth and established the community of Newport on the harbor.\* There is also reason to believe that friction as to political matters between the strong-minded Anne Hutchinson and the strong-willed Governor Coddington was a factor in this move but, whatever the reasons, Coddington and Coggeshall, as successful merchants in Boston, were well aware of the benefits that might accrue from establishing themselves at a point which gave promise of becoming a center of shipping and commerce. That they were far-seeing is attested by the 1960 population figures – Newport, 47,000; Portsmouth, 8,250.

The citizens remaining in Portsmouth elected new officials, naming William Hutchinson as Judge together with seven Assistants of whom Philip Sherman was one. However, it seemed unnatural that, being located on so small an island, the two communities should remain politically divided; there was no conflict in basic policies or laws, and the founders of both towns had come to Aquidneck as comrades after suffering religious

---

\*Included among the “several others” was Thomas Hazard who had come to Aquidneck after the first group arrived and from whom we are descended. His great-granddaughter, Elizabeth Tripp, married Richard Mitchell who was the great-grandfather of Elizabeth Mitchell, wife of Asa and mother of Richard Mitchell Sherman.

and political persecution for the same fundamental convictions. Furthermore, union of the towns would serve to strengthen Aquidneck in any conflict with the neighboring colonies or with the Indians. Therefore, after some months of negotiations, ten Portsmouth delegates, including Philip Sherman, William Hutchinson and John Porter, presented themselves on March 12, 1640 at the general election in Newport and asked that the two communities be “reunited”. As recorded by the Newport clerk, this proposal was “readily embraced by us” and on that day by unanimous consent the two towns united to form the single colony which four years later formally assumed the title of “the Isle of Rhodes or Rhode Island”.

The new “constitution” of the united settlements provided for a Governor (William Coddington), Deputy Governor (John Coggeshall), four Assistants, two Treasurers, two Constables, a Secretary and a Sergeant, both towns being represented on this group of officials. The Governor and the Assistants (Hutchinson and Porter in Portsmouth) were invested with the power and offices of Justices of the Peace, trial by jury was instituted and a little later it was provided that decisions of the monthly courts held in Portsmouth and Newport might be appealed to the higher “Parliamentary or General Courts” convoked quarterly. Cases “in the matter of life and limb” were tried only in these higher courts and in all courts the precepts of the English Common Law were followed and all writs and processes were according to English practice. Freemen of each town acting by majority vote were authorized to allot public land to settlers and to record the same officially.

The General Court of the two towns, noting the danger of possible attack by the Indians or by the Dutch, then occupying Manhattan, ordered “that as soon as notice is given of any probable incursion, that then forthwith Three Muskets be distinctly discharged and the Drumm or Drummes incessantly to beat an Alarum; and that forthwith each Man bearing arms shall repair to the coulers, which shall be lodged at ye Chief Magistrate's House in each Plantation (i.e. settlement), as he will answer at his peril”. Also it was ordered that eight musters of one day each should be held every year in each settlement, the men “openlie in the field (to) be exercised by their Commanders and Officers”. In addition, there were to be two General Musters every year, one in Newport and one in Portsmouth.

Financial security was provided by ordering that “each town shall have a joint and an equal supply of the Money in the Treasury”, receipts and expenditures to be warranted by the Governor, Deputy Governor and one Assistant from each town “according to the Major Vote of the Townsmen”.

In order to define the boundary between the two communities a joint committee of ten men – including Philip Sherman for Portsmouth and

Thomas Hazard for Newport – was chosen to lay out the lands belonging to each town.\* Also, at about the same time, Philip was made secretary to Governor Coddington, thus becoming in effect the first Secretary of Rhode Island.

Beyond these practical concerns – executive government, justice under law, land allotment, military protection, financial security and township boundaries – the Rhode Islanders felt the need for a formal statement of the fundamentals upon which their small but growing “Body Politick” should be based. Accordingly in Portsmouth on March 16-18, 1641 at the General Court of Election the following basic declaration was enacted:

#### Majority Rule

“It is ordered and unanimously agreed upon, that the Government which this Bodie Politick doth attend unto in this Island, and the Jurisdiction thereof, in favour of our Prince, is a DEMOCRACIE, or Popular Government; that is to say, It is in the powre of the Body of Freemen orderly assembled, or the major part of them, to make or constitute Just Laws, by which they will be regulated, and to depute from among themselves such Ministers as shall see them faithfully executed between Man and Man.”

#### Land Tenure

“It is Ordered, Established, and Decreed, unanimously, that all men's Proprieties in their Lands of the Island, and the Jurisdiction thereof, shall be such, and soe free, that neyther the State nor any Person or Persons shall intrude into it, molest him in itt, to deprive him of anything whatsoever that is, or shall be within that or any of the bounds thereof; and that his Tenure and the Propriety of his therein shall be continued to him or his; or to whomsoever he shall assign it for Ever.”

#### The State Seal

“It is ordered that a Manual Seal shall be provided for the State, and that the Signett or Engraving thereof, shall be a Sheafe of Arrows bound up, and in the liess or bond, this motto indented: AMOR VINCET OMNIA.” (Love conquers all.)

\*Twenty years later Philip Sherman was among those named by the Portsmouth Town Meeting to “review the old line and run it as it is recorded ... forasmuch as there hath been of late some intrusion by some of the Newport men who have altered our line.”

#### Religious Liberty

“It was further ordered by the authority of this present Courte, that none bee accounted a Delinquent for Doctrine: Provided, it be not directly repugnant to ye Government or lawes established.”

In those days of religious intolerance this last paragraph marked an epochal step and Rhode Island – then consisting of Aquidneck only – was the first colony “holding forth a lively experiment that a flourishing civil state may stand, yea, and be best maintained, and that among English spirits, with a full liberty in religious concernments.” Thus – and note this well! – no person in Rhode Island was ever called to a Court of Inquisition for his religious belief or practice nor deprived of his liberty, except for crime.\*

In the first paragraph of this declaration, are the words “in favour of our Prince”. They refer to Charles I because Aquidneck had no Royal Patent and needed some formal recognition from the Mother Country to help protect the island settlements from hostile Massachusetts Bay on the north and east and expanding Connecticut on the west. Newport in December 1639 had affirmed its allegiance to King Charles and to his laws and in September 1642 the island colony as a whole appointed a committee to write and ask Sir Harry Vane in London to use his good offices to obtain for them a Royal Patent (or Charter). He had been Governor of Massachusetts Bay in 1636, had espoused the doctrine of the Covenant of Grace, and had returned to England after the victory of the forces of religious intolerance so he was regarded as a good friend and kindred spirit. There is no record as to whether this petition for a patent was ever presented and as the Civil War was just then breaking out between the Royalists and the forces of Parliament under Cromwell, perhaps the colonists or Sir Henry decided against taking any action until the situation in the home country should be stabilized.

In the years 1637-1643 attempts were made by the Connecticut, New Haven (then a separate colony), Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonists to form a confederation as a protection against the Dutch or the Indians. In spite of boundary disputes, this confederation was finally established in

\*A similar policy was approved in 1965 by the Second Vatican Council of the Roman Catholic Church which, by overwhelming vote and with the Pope's consent, declared that the right to religious liberty is based on both divine revelation and “the very dignity of human nature”, that in religious affairs no one can be forced to act against his conscience, and that the state must protect this human right and must refrain from imposing any religion upon an individual and from preventing his joining or leaving any religious group. (“Time”, Oct. 1, 1965.)



1643, being defined by Connecticut as "a firm combination for a defensive and offensive war, and all other mutual offices of love". However, the love did not extend to the colonists of Rhode Island and when Governor Coddington applied for membership in 1644 they met with an "utter refusall" as being "tumultuous and schismatic" unless they would "absolutely and without reservacon submitt" themselves to Plymouth or Massachusetts Bay. To this demand the Rhode Islanders would not assent. If attacked, they would rely on their own men repairing promptly "to the coulers" upon the "Three Musketts being distinctly discharged" or the "Drumms incessantly beating an Alarum". Incidentally, in these negotiations, Massachusetts Bay would not herself communicate with the magistrates of Aquidneck, saying that they were "men not to be capitulated withal by us, either for themselves or the people of the island where they inhabit".

While all these important political developments were taking place, the eternal round of human life and death continued its steady course. In 1640, Philip and Sarah were saddened by the death of their good friend and neighbor, William Hutchinson, who had been elected Assistant of the colony only a few months before. His widow, Anne, then moved to the shore of Long Island Sound and three years later they were shocked to learn that she and her household had been massacred by the Indians. But in Massachusetts Bay the ministers piously pronounced her fate a judgment from Heaven.

#### A Parliamentary Charter Union with Providence Plantations

During the years following the settlement of Aquidneck relations had been friendly with the much smaller community of "Providence Plantations" on the mainland to the north and with Roger Williams, its leading citizen. However, there had been no political association between them and in Providence Plantations there was no government remotely approaching the very comprehensive organization set up with such care on Aquidneck. Therefore, the citizens of the latter were greatly surprised and many were resentful when, in September 1644, Williams returned from a trip to London bearing a Parliamentary Charter for "Providence Plantations in Narragansett Bay". To be sure this document referred to the towns of Portsmouth and Newport as well as Providence and it was properly signed by the Earl of Warwick as Governor-in-Chief and by several Colonial Commissioners, including Sir Harry Vane. But the citizens of Aquidneck had given Williams no authority to represent them and while the charter guaranteed the same rights and privileges as those enjoyed by Plymouth, Massachusetts Bay and other colonies, it made no reference to

Indian land titles nor to religious liberty nor was there any mention of the Colony of Rhode Island or Aquidneck.

At first the citizens of the latter were for repudiating this Charter out of hand but Dr. Clarke, although he recognized Williams' "headiness" in acting without authority for a population five times as large as that at Providence, realized that the possession of such a document was important to the security of all the communities involved. Also, England being still in a state of political upheaval, it might have been very difficult to obtain another charter. Therefore, he favored acceptance by Aquidneck and, thanks in good part to his diplomacy and conciliatory spirit, the General Court of Election at Portsmouth on May 19-21, 1647 did at last agree "that all should set their hands to an engagement to the Charter". Also it was agreed that the town of Warwick -- on the west shore of Narragansett Bay ten miles south of Providence -- should have the same privileges as Providence. Thus the four towns on the mainland and the island became the "Colony of Providence Plantations". The name of Rhode Island is not in this title -- but it will return!

When the new and enlarged colony elected its officers all four constituent communities were represented in the administration. The chief officer was President John Coggeshall of Newport, the lower position of Assistant being assumed by former Governor William Coddington who opposed the new Charter and refused the Presidency. The other Assistants were Roger Williams of Providence, John Sanford of Portsmouth, and Randall Holden of Warwick. The Treasurer was Jeremy Clarke and the General Recorder was William Dyer, soon to be succeeded for the years 1648-51 by Philip Sherman whose duties were to keep the legislative and judicial records, and the records of land transfers, boundaries, wills and highways.

A General Code of Laws for the enlarged colony was drawn up at Newport -- quite possibly under the direction of Dr. Clarke and William Dyer, submitted to the several towns and approved. These laws, codified from English Common Law, were introduced by the following significant statements and reflected the spirit of the earlier declaration by Portsmouth and Newport:

"... the form of Government established in Providence Plantation is Demoraticall; that is to say, a Government Held by ye Free and Voluntarie Consent of all, or the Greater Parte of the Free Inhabitants"

The next order guaranteed

"... Each Man's Peaceable and Quiett Enjoyment of his Right and Libertie, notwithstanding our Different Consciences, Touching the Truth as it is in Jesus."

"... No person shall be taken or imprisoned or

disseized of his Lands or Liberties, or be Exiled . . . but by the Lawful judgment of his Peeres, or by some known law of the Generall Assemblie (No. 11)."

Trial by jury, conducted much as such trials are conducted here today, was also provided and a further paragraph - very advanced for its time - recognized that "the consciences of sundry men, truly conscionable, may scruple at giving or taking an oath" and provided that in such case "an affirmation before a Judge of Record" would be acceptable and that refusal to swear an oath would not bar a man from public office nor from giving legal testimony.

The new code as a whole was noteworthy for its freedom from Old Testament allusions and for its humanity and was pervaded by the spirit of Christ rather than that of Moses.

In the official seal of the newly chartered colony an anchor supplanted the bound sheaf of arrows while the single word "Hope" took the place of "Amor vincet omnia". And this is still the seal of the State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations.

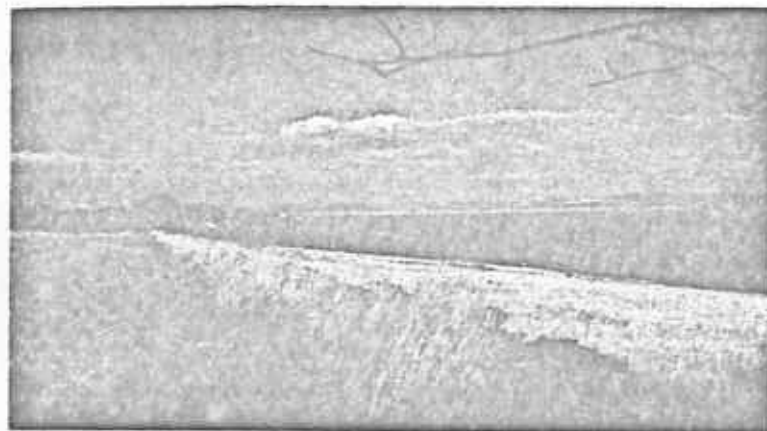
#### Life on the Sherman Farm

In the nine years since Philip and Sarah with little Eber and Sarah had camped at Founders' Brook, the colony had survived near-disaster, perfected its political organization, increased its population and expanded its boundaries. Philip, as a citizen and an official, had participated actively in all these developments, serving both his Town and his Colony, and had also steadily improved his farm and his home.

Though we lack a direct account, the known pattern of life in the area at the time gives a pretty reliable picture of how he worked and lived, and how his descendants were to work and live for several generations to come. Change came slowly in those days.

Food was provided by the obvious means of hunting, fishing and raising the field crops - primarily corn and rye - which involved clearing the fields, fencing with wood or stone, plowing, sowing, harvesting, etc. Following the original "habitable dwellings", permanent homes had been built, usually of wood, though some had stone walls at the ends or for the lower story. Most of these were usually two storied with attic and cellar and were heated by wide-throated fireplaces in a great central chimney. The wooden external walls and the partitions were of heavy timber, roughly squared by the ax. Chinked with moss and lined with heavy, hewn planks, the outer walls were often two feet thick which gives an idea of the size of the trees felled to build them. At first animal skins hung on the inner walls to keep out the drafts; later the walls were plastered. Ceilings were neither painted nor plastered. The few narrow windows had heavy

#### THE FIELDS GRANTED TO PHILIP SHERMAN IN 1638



*View to the Northeast, Sakonnet River below*



*As seen (center) across the Sakonnet  
from the Tiverton shore*

double shutters and in the earlier years light was admitted through oiled paper "panes", for even in England glass panes were then a luxury. The floors were sanded and the action of the sand on the hardwood, with the constant grinding of many feet and the frequent sweepings by the diligent housewife, gave the floors a smoothness which the builders were then unable to produce. Carpets, when available, were used in those early days to cover tables or chests.

On the small ships which brought the colonists from England, there was little room for anything but the barest necessities so at first the settlers had to "make do" with whatever they could construct or find in the land. Home-made backless benches and stools were the usual seats and at meals they used wooden bowls, gourds and handsome, polished turtle shells. The shells of the giant clam ("quahog") were also used for dishes while small clam shells in cleft sticks made excellent spoons. Large, thin scallop shells were used for skimmers. Of course they had their steel knives - they were among the "barest necessities" - and a few families were fortunate enough to have pewter table dishes and even silver or horn spoons for special occasions.

A deep cellar was dug for storing supplies for the winter and for the manufacture and ripening of home-brewed beer. Also it might contain casks of methaglin -- a potent liquor made by fermenting the honey of the wild bees. It was most desirable to have these beverages readily at hand because in the early colonial days men, women and even children indulged in the habit of drinking liquor and one of their greatest hardships was the inability to secure it easily. Then in desperation they had to turn to the drinking of water and some found to their surprise that it did them no harm. Parson Higginson of Salem wrote in 1629: "Whereas my stomach could only digest and did require such drink as was both strong and stale, I can and oftentimes do drink New England water very well"; and another early colonist even reported that it was "not accounted a strange thing to drink water". Subsequently the variety of warming but less potent beverages was increased by the introduction of chocolate, coffee and tea but they were not brought into New England until about 1680 and later.

There were times of relaxation, too, especially during the "husking parties" in November when groups of all ages went from farm to farm to help one another husk their corn. These parties combined both work and play and all participants went at it with a will, anticipating the pudding, nuts, cider and more potent beverages that they would enjoy when the job was done. Also on the long winter nights when the icy wind howled outside no more comfortable nor relaxing spot could be found than before the great fireplace with its blazing logs. Here families and neighbors gathered in the warmth and feasted on roasted apples and nuts and drank their fill of mulled cider, cider royal, egg cider and many other drinks of

which cider was the main part. The apple orchard was essential to every farm.

Philip's working day during the summer was from sunrise to sunset and in the winter from six to six - the Sabbath excepted - and we can see how he and his fellows must have labored to provide the food, build the houses (and barns) and make the many articles needed to furnish their homes. Beyond this were the town meetings and the drilling of the train bands requiring their attendance. Though each man helped his neighbor and the flow of new settlers gradually provided added workers, unending labor was still the order of the day.

While the people of the island and the mainland were battling with the forces of Nature to establish self-sustaining farms for themselves, they had also to contend with the threatening attitude of Massachusetts Bay which still claimed jurisdiction over Warwick and vicinity - a claim supported by certain settlers in that area. The danger inherent in this claim was enhanced by the fact that William Coddington had "treacherously" gone to England and had, without the consent of his constituents, procured from the Parliamentary Government in 1651 a commission appointing him for life the "Governor of Rhode Island", i. e. the islands of Aquidneck and nearby Conanicut only. This appointment naturally disrupted the union of 1647, leaving Providence and Warwick a prey to Massachusetts Bay. These towns with Portsmouth and Newport, now closely united by a common danger, sent Dr. Clarke and Roger Williams to England to protest Coddington's appointment and, thanks to the influence of Sir Harry Vane, Coddington's commission was withdrawn. In 1654 the four towns reunited by formal action and in 1658 Massachusetts Bay finally resigned her claim to the Warwick area. In the same year Providence Plantations passed a law providing that if any citizen should attempt to place his lands under the jurisdiction of another colony, they should be forfeited.

The colonies of Englishmen in America were as disputatious about their boundaries as were the peoples of differing nationalities in Europe and as we read New England Colonial history it seems a miracle that open war did not break out between them. Little Rhode Island was "caught in the middle" and many years were to pass before all her boundaries with Connecticut and Massachusetts Bay were finally set and accepted.

### The Society of Friends

In 1653 there arrived in Newport from England a small group of men who, with the religious associates who followed them, were to have a profound effect on the people of the colony and on our own forebears. They were members of the Society of Friends - more commonly called Quakers - who were then persecuted in England and generally in her

colonies, being welcomed at that time only in Rhode Island. Their doctrine had its source in the conviction of their great leader, George Fox, that fundamental spiritual assurance came not from any external source but from the voice of God speaking within the individual human soul. This "Inner Light" or "that of God in every man" was regarded by the Friends as the light of Christ who had always been active in the hearts of men. To them this light was even in the heathen who were believed by most Christians to be bound for Hell but who, in the eyes of the Friends, would be entitled to salvation if they followed such light as they had. Fox called on Friends to bear themselves towards others in the way that was most likely to call forth the response of goodness to goodness, i. e. "answering that of God in everyone" – in fact, even especially, in those who were doing evil.

Here was, in effect, an amplification of the doctrine of "a Covenant of Grace" ("The direct revelation in the individual soul of God's grace and love.") and also a doctrine of religious tolerance. Obviously this aroused great antagonism in all who subscribed to a formal religion based solely on the Scriptures as interpreted by an organized clergy and by the same token it appealed strongly to the people who had come to Rhode Island because of their belief in "a Covenant of Grace" and who in their new colony had firmly established the principle of religious liberty.

So the Friends, who were deeply – and often fanatically – dedicated to spreading their doctrine, came to Rhode Island in increasing numbers, finding a fertile field for their missionary ardor in this "Island of Refuge" and enlisting many converts in Newport and Portsmouth. In fact, eleven of the Governors of the colony became disciples of Fox and the Friends held political control of the Colony for almost a century, the last Quaker Governor being Stephen Hopkins, a signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Philip and Sarah Sherman joined the Society of Friends as did their children and their children's children for two hundred years, and the graves of my great-grandparents, Asa and Elizabeth Mitchell Sherman, are in the burying ground of the Friends Meeting House in Portsmouth.

Other Quaker tenets should be mentioned. Quakers held that all war is unlawful for a Christian not only because it is inhuman and contrary to Scriptural teaching but because the bringing of the evil mind to the light is more important than individual or national safety whereas war deepens and multiplies the wrong. This pacifist position is no mean-spirited yielding to evil but is a way of standing up to it which has in it the possibility of changing the evil mind, perhaps even by reason of the suffering of those who take this way. In the early days when subjected to cruel persecution the Friends did not put up a fight and women did not

call upon men to protect them but men and women alike set themselves, sometimes successfully, by non-resisting endurance to bring home to their persecutors the sense of their evil-doing.\*

In their worship, Friends gave free play to the leading of the Spirit and without the formal arrangement of a ceremonial service they waited before God in silence, not meeting as separate individuals but trusting that the fellowship of living silence shared together would "naturally and frequently excite the worshippers to pray and to praise God and stir up one another by mutual exhortations and instructions".

They had a high standard of truthfulness, they resisted the taking of oaths, from the beginning they have continued to take special thought for the poor, they opposed the irrational subjugation of women, and in later years they worked diligently for the abolition of slavery.

Such were the principles which animated our Sherman ancestors for six generations and which they embraced at a time when they were surrounded by stronger colonies that took the sternest measures to wipe out such "heresy". Massachusetts Bay, Connecticut and Plymouth colonies passed severe laws under which over forty Quakers were flogged, sixty-four imprisoned, over forty banished, one branded, three had their ears cut off, and four were hanged – these last in Massachusetts Bay, the only colony invoking the death penalty against the Friends. In 1657 the Commissioners of the United Colonies of New England wrote the Rhode Island government of the "prudent care" that Massachusetts Bay had taken in protecting itself against Quakers and requested that Rhode Island banish all Quakers on Aquidneck and prohibit any more from coming so that the "contagion" might not spread. The letter ended with the threat that if the little colony did not take such action, "we apprehend that it will be our duty seriously to consider what further provision God may call us to make to prevent the aforesaid mischief."

The Rhode Island Governor was not a Quaker and he felt that their doctrines might "tend to very absolute cutting down and over-turning relations and civil government among men", yet he replied that his colony had "no law whereby to punish any for only declaring by words, etc., their minds and understandings concerning the things and ways of God, as to

---

\*On April 1, 1653, the Town Records of Portsmouth noted: "It is ordered that Mr. Sanford, Mr. Bauiston, Mr. Porter, Capt. Morris, Lieut. Albrow, Ensign Samuel Wilbore and Philip Sherman or any fower of them consenting, shall consult and determine all matters of defense and offense." This entry was made just about the time Philip -- plus perhaps another of these six men -- joined the Society of Friends and the Town Council may have wondered whether he would be willing to serve on such a committee. Quakers were expelled from their Meetings (congregations) if they so much as drilled with the "Train Bands". I was unable to learn whether Philip served on this committee. F.B.S.



salvation and an eternal condition". And he added: "... surely we find that they (Quakers) delight to be persecuted by civil powers, and when they are soe, they are like to gain more adherents by the consequence of their patient suffering, than by consent to their pernicious saying ..."

Several months later the Rhode Island General Assembly replied in similar vein saying that freedom of conscience, "which freedom we still prize as the greatest happiness that men can possess in this world", was the principal ground of their Charter.\*

The response of the United Colonies was to threaten to cut off Rhode Island's trade and deprive her of the necessities of life.

As for the tender mercies of Massachusetts Bay towards Quakers, I shall mention one case because it concerned Mary Dyer, who had come to Aquidneck with the Shermans and with whose husband Philip had been closely associated. It was she - as you may remember - who had walked down the church aisle with Anne Hutchinson when the latter was excommunicated. Mrs. Dyer had become an ardent Quaker and though she knew that, having been banished, her return to Massachusetts Bay would subject her to the death penalty, she returned thither in the autumn of 1659 to spread the gospel of her faith. She and two men companions, William Robinson and Marmaduke Stephenson, were arrested and, in spite of the intercession of Governor Winthrop of Connecticut, they were sentenced to be hanged. Upon her son's petition she was reprieved and once more banished, but the authorities decreed that she be led to the gallows with her companions and be told of her reprieve only after their dead bodies were swinging on each side of her. Then, still bound and with the hangman's noose around her neck, she was told of her reprieve. She refused to accept her life but her courage and constancy had so aroused the populace that certain of the colony's officials took her in their arms, set her upon a horse and had her taken home to Rhode Island. A few months later, however, she returned to Boston and told the General Court that she had come again to bear witness against an unjust law. Her husband, who was not a Quaker, pled for her life but this time the law took its course and she was hanged on the Common on June 1, 1660.

General Atherton, one of her persecutors, proclaimed: "Mary Dyer did hang as a flag for others to take example by". Her body did indeed "hang as a flag" but - as is evidenced by these quotations from two American historians - it did not set quite the example that the general had in mind:

---

\*Roger Williams upheld this right to religious liberty but so strongly disagreed with the Friends' doctrines that in 1672 at the age of seventy-three he rowed twenty-five miles down Narragansett Bay from Providence to Newport to engage in a three-day debate with their leaders over what he considered to be their errors.

*"Freedom of thought is the greatest triumph over tyranny that brave men have ever won. . . The 'battle of New England' was won by the martyred Quakers."*

*- Brooks Adams*

*"The rise of the people called Quakers is one of the memorable events in the history of man. It marks the moment when intellectual freedom was claimed unconditionally by the people as an inalienable birthright."*

*-- George Bancroft*

While one more Quaker suffered execution in Massachusetts Bay, the people of that colony were now rising against the persecuting tyranny of the ministers and magistrates. In England Oliver Cromwell asked Parliament, "Is it ingenuous to ask liberty and not give it? What greater hypocrisy than for those who were opposed by the Bishops to become the greatest oppressors themselves as soon as their yoke was removed?" and, soon after the Stuart Restoration, Charles II himself interceded on the Quakers' behalf. The laws were then made less stringent and by 1665 the Royal Commissioners commanded the colony to refrain from molesting Quakers in their secular business.

#### A New Royal Charter

The Restoration of the Stuart monarchy in 1660 had annulled the acts of England's Long Parliament and compelled Rhode Island to protect her privileges through a new charter. Dr. John Clarke, dispatched promptly to London to obtain this, was encouraged in his mission by the Declaration of Breda enunciated by Charles II: "We do declare a Liberty to tender consciences; and that no Man shall be disquieted, or called in question, for differences of opinion in matters of religion which do not disturb the peace of the kingdom; and that we shall be ready to consent to such an act of Parliament as, upon mature deliberation, shall be offered to us, for the full granting that indulgence."

This laid a firm basis for Rhode Island's petition and, as Dr. Clarke took full advantage of it, the new Royal Charter of 1663 for "The Governor and Company of the English Colony of RHODE ISLAND AND PROVIDENCE PLANTATIONS . . ." proved to be one of the most liberal state papers ever issued by the English crown. It guaranteed religious liberty, reaffirmed a "democratical" government, and acknowledged the Indians' title to the soil, thus recognizing legal ownership of land purchased from them. Under it the colony was an absolute sovereignty with powers to make its own laws and became in fact and almost in name an independent state. In brief, it confirmed all the privileges in the previous charter and vested even greater power in the people. Too much credit cannot be given

to John Clarke for negotiating the granting of this remarkable instrument.

The government under this charter was much the same as that set up in 1647, being vested in a Governor, Deputy Governor, Assistants and a House of Deputies. The whole legislative body was called the General Assembly and in this from 1665 to 1667 Philip Sherman served as a Deputy representing Portsmouth.

### "King Philip's War"

During the years since the Pilgrims had brought the "Mayflower" into Plymouth harbor the relations between the colonists and the Indians had suffered a steady deterioration. When the Pilgrims landed they were few in number and had great difficulty in coping with the wilderness. They sought to establish and maintain friendly relations with the Indians who, in spite of a recent epidemic which had heavily reduced their population, far outnumbered the colonists. Under the leadership of Massasoit, sachem of the powerful Wampanoags, the Indians taught the Pilgrims how to survive and the latter benefited from their teachings and were grateful – for a while.

However, as the land-hungry English flowed across the Atlantic in ever-increasing numbers and acquired Indian territory at ridiculously low prices or through legal subterfuges, they became better able to care for themselves, their attitudes towards the Indians changed to arrogance and contempt and they subjected certain tribes to many unjust and onerous regulations. A few voices among the colonists – notably that of Roger Williams – pled unavailingly for a "fair deal" for the aborigines and when the Pequot War broke out in 1637 as the result of a minor incident, the colonists practically annihilated the tribe, burning men, women and children alive in their fortified village.

Eventually the Indians – who had been divided by inter-tribal conflicts – realized that if they were to survive, they would have to unite and rise against the white men. At this time, due to natural increase, the population of the New England tribes had grown to about 13,000 but, thanks to steady immigration, the English colonists in the same area numbered close to 52,000. Obviously it was "now or never" for the Indians and in June 1675, under the urging of "King Philip", son of Massasoit and now Sachem of his tribe, they rose and struck.

To state the Indians' case there are no words more eloquent than those of "King Philip" himself in his reply to a close friend among the Rhode Island colonists who had pointed out the reciprocal benefits resulting from peace and urged him to refrain from hostile action:

*"The English who came first to this country were but an handful of people, forlorn, poor, and distressed. My father was then Sachem. He*

*relieved their distresses in the most kind and hospitable manner. He gave them land to build and plant upon. He did all in his power to serve them. Others of their own countrymen came and joined them. Their numbers rapidly increased. My father's counsellors became uneasy and alarmed lest, as they were possessed of firearms, which was not the case with the Indians, they should finally undertake to give law to the Indians, and take from them their country. They therefore advised him to destroy them before they should become too strong, and it should be too late. My father was also the father of the English. He represented to his counsellors and warriors that the English knew many sciences which the Indians did not; that they improved and cultivated the earth, and raised cattle and fruits, and that there was sufficient room in the country for both the English and the Indians. His advice prevailed. It was concluded to give victuals to the English. They flourished and increased. Experience taught that the advice of my father's counsellors was right. By various means they got possessed of a great part of his territory. But he still remained their friend till he died. My elder brother became Sachem. They pretended to suspect him of evil designs against them. He was seized and confined, and thereby thrown into sickness and died. Soon after I became Sachem they disarmed all my people. They tried my people by their own laws, and assessed damages against them which they could not pay. Their land was taken. At length a line of division was agreed upon between the English and my people, and I myself was to be responsible. Sometimes the cattle of the English would come into the cornfields of my people, for they did not make fences like the English. I must then be seized and confined till I sold another tract of my country for satisfaction of all damages and costs. Thus tract after tract is gone. But a small part of the dominion of my ancestors remains. I am determined not to live till I have no country."*

The colonists as a whole were completely surprised and woefully unprepared for "King Philip's War" and the United Colonies' troops were at first poorly organized and equipped and, in many instances, badly led. The outlying settlements suffered the most, buildings being burned and farms abandoned all along the frontier, but the more developed areas suffered also, sixteen towns being wholly destroyed in Massachusetts Bay and four on the mainland of Rhode Island. However, during three years of massacres, ambushes, skirmishes and pitched battles, the colonists – often aided by Indians who had not joined the uprising – gradually improved their strategy and finally gained the victory.

The most effective leader of colonial troops was our ancestor, Colonel Benjamin Church of Little Compton, who adopted the Indians' tactics of guerrilla warfare. Historian Arnold says of him: "He was to Rhode Island what Miles Standish had been to the first generation of the Plymouth

colonists – a buckler and a shield in the hour of danger . . . His conquests were conducted with more humanity than was displayed by many of his colleagues while his courage and military skill were conspicuous.”\*

When the conflict ended, the colonists' losses had been enormous and of their men of military age one out of every sixteen had been killed.

Throughout the war Rhode Island occupied an anomalous position. The relations between the neighboring Narragansetts and the colony were good. Roger Williams had often proved to be one of the Indians' best English friends, the injustices against which King Philip rebelled had been committed by the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies – not by Rhode Island, and Rhode Island was not a member of the United Colonies Confederation conducting the war. Furthermore, Rhode Island disapproved of the war which, due to her exposed situation, threatened her very existence, and her charter specified that no other colony should molest the Indians within her boundaries without the knowledge and consent of her government.

However, while the first Indian attack had taken place in Plymouth Colony and the fighting had spread to Massachusetts Bay, the hitherto friendly Narragansett tribe – much of it under Rhode Island's jurisdiction – soon joined the uprising led by their Sachem, Canonchet, and King Philip himself had for a time occupied a fortified position near Pocasset. Thus Rhode Island, against her will, became directly involved and the General Assembly referred her defense to councils of war established in the individual towns. Her position became even more precarious when in December 1675 United Colonies troops, without consulting her government and in direct violation of her charter, marched through Providence and Warwick on their way to attack the Narragansetts.

Clearly Rhode Island had to defend herself for to most Indians every white man was now an enemy and, while her government took no formal action, many of her citizens volunteered to serve with United Colonies troops and the latter received supplies and other aid from her people.

This presented a vital question to Philip Sherman and his eight sons – all now of military age – as well as to their fellow Quakers. Should they fight to protect their neighbors and their own wives and children? The law then exempted Friends from military service because their faith forbade fighting even in self-defense, their relations with the Indians had been friendly and they disapproved of the war; furthermore Quakers had been imprisoned, flogged, mutilated and executed in the very colonies whose unjust treatment of the Indians had caused the war. On the other hand, their neighbors in Warwick and Providence were in dire peril and the

Indians might soon attack Aquidneck itself. There must have been much profound soul-searching among the Friends on the island but the Quakers then held with rigid tenacity to their doctrines, a tenacity reinforced by the severe discipline of their association. Thus, they stood firm; if so many of their fellows had withstood contumely, suffering and even death, so could they. Not a single Quaker took up arms against the Indians.

But they could help their fellow citizens in other ways and they opened their homes to the imperiled settlers on the mainland. This offer being promptly accepted, practically all the inhabitants of Warwick, Providence and the surrounding area flocked to the “island of refuge” and many of them were doubtless quartered in the Sherman families' farmhouses. Also, in March 1675 the Portsmouth Town Meeting, “being willinge to afoard Neighbourly Charity to men in want and distress” ordered a committee of six townsmen, including Philip, to lay out up to one hundred acres of the “Townes Commons as may be Convenient for those that want reliefe (to) improve by Sowing or plantinge for the time of two yeares...”

Meanwhile on the mainland the Narragansetts had suffered a severe defeat and when the United Colonies troops moved away, they sought their revenge. Rhode Island alone could not supply enough men to withstand them and the Narragansetts and their allies destroyed Warwick and Providence while bands of marauding Indians swept over the countryside just across the narrow channels separating Aquidneck from the mainland.

Stronger defenses were imperative and on April 4, 1676 the General Assembly established a flotilla of gunboats, manned by four to six men each, which were to sail constantly around the island to prevent invasion. The Indians on Aquidneck were placed under close custody (though it was ordered that “no Indian in this colony be a slave”), two heavy cannon were mounted at Portsmouth, and sixteen “of the most judicious inhabitants” of the colony – including Philip Sherman – were desired to attend the sittings of the Assembly to advise with that body “in these troublesome times and straits”. It was on the very day when the Assembly took this action that the Sachem, Canonchet, was captured. When informed that he had been sentenced to be shot, this last great chief of the Narragansetts replied: “I like it well, I shall die before my heart is soft, or I have said anything unworthy of myself”.\*

Even though they had lost their Sachem's skillful leadership, the Indians continued their merciless depredations – every house was burned,

\*See Appendix B, “Our Mayflower Ancestors”, Line of Descent from Richard Warren.

\*Two weeks later, by peculiar chance, Dr. John Clarke (who had purchased Aquidneck from Canonchet's father) died quietly in Newport after a life of service whose value to the colony can never be over-estimated. If the inclinations of those two fine men could have been followed, King Philip's War would never have taken place.

every fertile field laid waste between Providence and the seacoast. In June 1676 the Assembly, feeling the need for more defenders, repealed the law exempting Quakers from bearing arms and now required every citizen to do his part in personally defending the colony. But the tide was turning; by July the colonial troops had definitely gained the upper hand, many Indians had surrendered to the Rhode Island government or to the United Colonies, and on August 12 King Philip himself was killed.

The victory of the colonists was final and the power of the Indians – particularly along the seaboard – was almost completely destroyed. Some of the captives were killed, some distributed as slaves to white masters and, in spite of the protests of a few colonists, many – including King Philip's wife and little son – were sold into slavery in Spain or the West Indies. In contrast, while there were a few cases of torture, the treatment of white captives by the Indians was on the whole more humane and there is no record of any white woman being raped by her "savage" captors.

Portions of the quartered bodies of Canonchet and Philip were placed on public exhibit, Canonchet's head being sent as a "token of love" to the Connecticut Colonial Commissioners while King Philip's head was for twenty years exhibited on a gibbet in Plymouth. Not far from this same spot now stands the statue erected by grateful Christians in memory of his father, Massasoit, who had continued to aid the English instead of destroying them before they should destroy his people. As descendants of the Pilgrims we Shermans owe our very existence to Massasoit's generous spirit.

The danger to Rhode Island ended with King Philip's death. Due to the protection of its surrounding waters Aquidneck had been spared any fighting and had escaped devastation but the colony's mainland had become a desert and Rhode Island, which had always opposed the war, had suffered relatively more than any of her neighbor colonies. Gradually, however, farms and towns were restored and after almost fifteen months on the "island of refuge" the citizens of Providence and Warwick returned to their rebuilt homes.

Aquidneck's Quakers had not been forced to choose between the principles of their faith and obedience to a law requiring them to fight, and their exemption from military service was restored after the war.

Contrary to the less humane practice of her neighbors, Rhode Island executed only one Indian captive and did not sell any into foreign slavery. Instead she decreed for them a sort of "apprenticeship system" whereby they were sold to local citizens at a fixed scale of prices and required to serve for specified periods depending on their age. Most were apparently freed between the ages of twenty-six and thirty after six to eight years of service. Philip Sherman took advantage of this "apprenticeship system" to obtain the services of four Indians.

The Indian war had interrupted a boundary dispute with Rhode Island's neighbors which had lasted – and was to continue – for many years and which at times had almost erupted into open warfare. The Royal Charter of 1663 had given Rhode Island jurisdiction over Conanicut Island and the potentially rich farmland along the coast south of Warwick and extending from Narragansett Bay to the Pawcatuck River. Connecticut did not recognize this jurisdiction and Massachusetts Bay and Plymouth colonies also entered claims. This dispute is important here only as illustrating the inter-colonial hostilities with which Rhode Island still had to contend and because Philip Sherman had a personal interest in the matter, being the owner of a certain "purchase right" to property in Westerly which is on the east shore of the Pawcatuck River near its mouth. Happily for Rhode Island and for Philip and his heirs, the Royal Government prevented intercolonial warfare and Rhode Island's claim was confirmed in 1727.

#### Last Days and Last Testament

In 1680 Philip Sherman passed his "allotted span" of three score years and ten and it became important to decide how he should divide his now considerable property among the members of his considerable family. Here are the terms of his will, signed on July 30, 1681, which named his seventh son, Samuel, as its executor. (The names of his children are here given in order of their birth with the years of their births and of their marriages, if known, and the names of their wives or husbands:

To wife Sarah - The west half of the farm I dwell on, the use of the fire room at the west end of my new dwelling, a bed, maintenance by Samuel in raiment and necessities, and to her ten good ewe sheep.

To Eber (born 1634, married Mary Wilcox) - Ten acres in Portsmouth and what he has had and my horseflesh in Narragansett except one mare – the second best – which I give to my grandchildren, Thomas and Peleg Mumford.

To daughter Sarah (born 1636, married Thomas Mumford) - Ten ewe sheep.

To Peleg (born 1638, married Elizabeth Lawton in 1657) - Five ewe sheep.

To Edmund (born 1641, married Dorcas ----) - One-quarter share of meadow and one-sixth share of upland in Ponagasset in Dartmouth and also a whole purchase right in Westerly.\*

\*Edmund settled in Dartmouth - now in Massachusetts - and became a leading citizen in that community.



To Samson - our ancestor - (born 1642, married Isabel Tripp in 1675) - At the death of my wife, the west half of the farm I dwell on (Note. This adjoined Samson's own farm.), those four Indians which we jointly bought, a white-faced mare with her foal, and, equally with Samuel, a draught horse and two draught steers.

To John (born 1644, married Sarah Spooner in 1674) - My bay mare and her foal.

To Mary (born 1645, married Samuel Wilbur) - Ten ewe sheep.

To Hannah (born 1647, married William Chase) - Five pounds for herself and children and five ewe sheep.

To Samuel (born 1648, married Martha Tripp in 1681) - The rest of the farm I dwell on and my now dwelling house and other buildings and to have two parts of grass and hay during the life of my wife and all neat cattle, horsekind, sheep and swine except two oxen and a fatting cow, and, equally with Samson, one draught horse and two draught steers; and all movable goods except two great chests with lock and key each which are for my wife, Sarah.

To Benjamin (born 1650, married Hannah Mowry in 1674) - All the remaining part of my land at Briggs Swamp where said Benjamin's house now stands - about twenty acres.

To Philip (born 1652, married Benjamin Chase - she was a daughter, remember?) - Ten ewe sheep.

Clearly Philip expected his daughters to benefit from their husbands' inheritances as it was customary for property to pass to the male line; clearly also he had a special affection for his Mumford grandsons. His sons John and Peleg received small legacies because he had already given them considerable property.

We note that Samuel was married in the same year in which the will was drawn which seems to indicate that up to that time, when he had reached the age of thirty-three, he had been living with his parents on the "home farm" and had certainly been a great help to his father in his declining years while, as the will shows, Samson, Benjamin and probably Eber and Edmund had farms of their own to maintain. Samuel received the largest bequest but at the same time he was made responsible for the care of his mother.

The will shows that Philip had not confined his land purchases to Aquidneck. Narragansett is on the mainland on the coast just across the bay from Newport. Westerly is on the Pawcatuck River on the western boundary of the state and Dartmouth is on the Paskamasset River in what was then Plymouth Colony (later Massachusetts) about ten miles eastward

from the shore of the Sakonnet River. Our forefather had been on the lookout for "good buys" in real estate.

Incidentally, in 1694 Philip's sons, John and Edmund, received confirmatory deeds to land in Dartmouth from William Bradford who must have been a son of Governor Bradford of Plymouth Colony. That area was obviously well regarded by the farmers of Aquidneck.

If the four Indians "which we jointly bought" left to Samson were captives purchased at the end of King Philip's War, their terms of service may have expired by the time Samson came into his inheritance.

Though the exact date of "wife Sarah's" death is not recorded, we do know that she died several years before her husband. However, she was still living when he made his will in mid-1681, and it is just possible that two years later the couple celebrated their Golden Wedding Anniversary surrounded by their eleven children and many, many more grandchildren. In any event they must have contemplated with much satisfaction and heartfelt thanks to the Lord all that they had accomplished in their long years together and particularly in the period since they had first set foot on the wilderness of Aquidneck Island.

Three years after Philip's Fiftieth Wedding Anniversary, Rhode Island's most hostile neighbor received a blow which destroyed the political power of its clerical oligarchy. Massachusetts Bay had long regarded itself as a practically independent country and had violated or evaded compliance with English laws, especially those regulating overseas commerce and designed to maintain the trade system on which the British Empire was based. For twenty years the Royal Government had sought to resolve these differences on a reasonable basis but Massachusetts Bay's tactics in the negotiations were such that the Government could only acknowledge that colony's virtual independence or void its charter. Charles II adopted the latter course and on October 13, 1684 Massachusetts Bay ceased to be a chartered colony and found herself bereft of the power to which she had clung so tenaciously.

The Rhode Islanders were relieved that their neighbor would now be ruled by a Royal Governor instead of a group of overbearing clergymen but Charles was a firm believer in the Divine Right of Kings. He now set out to cancel all charters, not only of cities in England but of the colonies in New England and for the latter he devised a Dominion government under a Royal Governor who should rule from Maine to New York. After Charles died in 1685, his brother, James II, continuing this policy, named Edmund Andros as Governor and empowered him to appoint his own council. The colonies' elected assemblies were eliminated and Andros was in effect a despot.

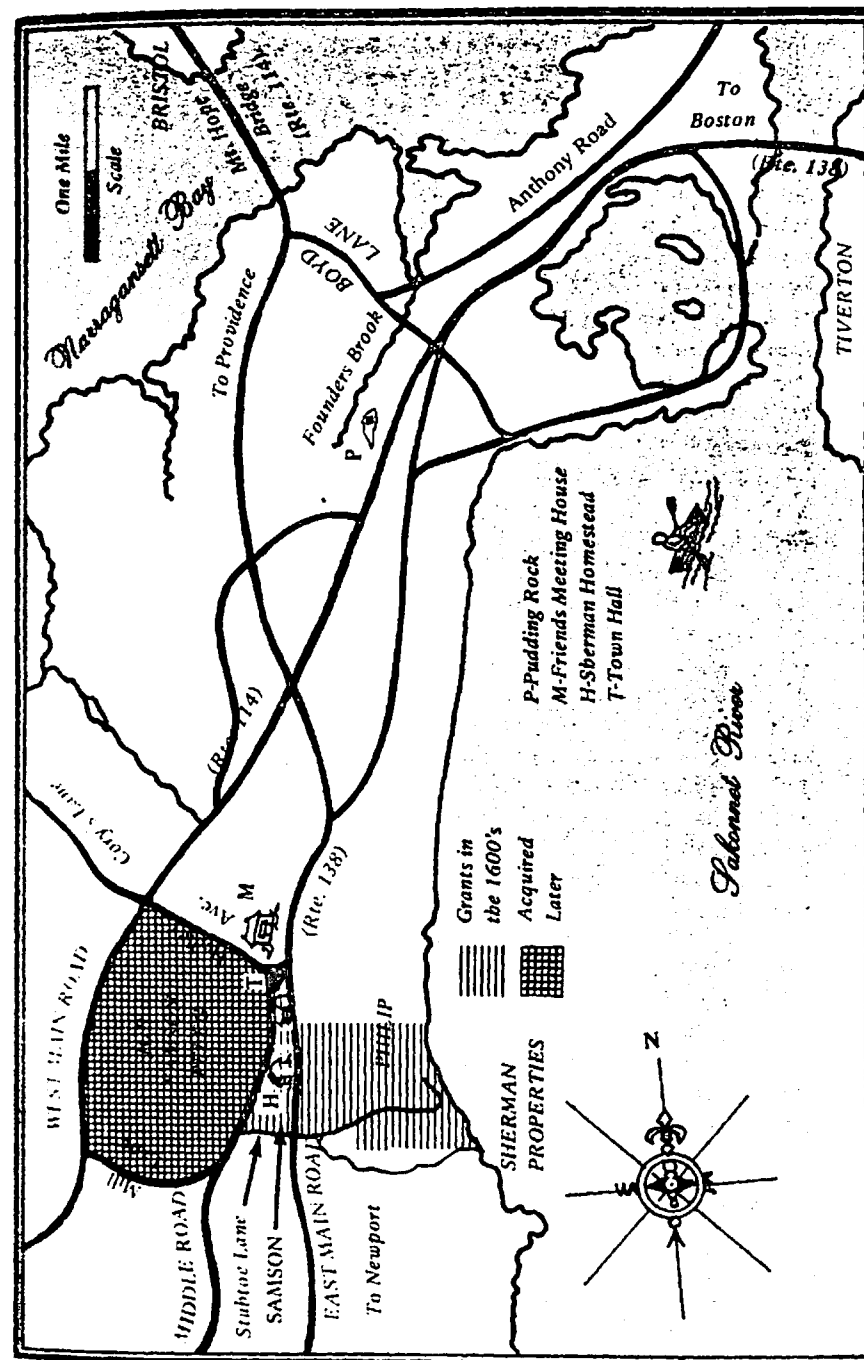
When Andros arrived in New England in 1686 he was, to say the least, received with little enthusiasm and, while they did not oppose him with

force, both Connecticut and Rhode Island succeeded by subterfuge in avoiding surrendering their charters to him. However, he was in effective control and, as one good result of his administration, Rhode Island was safe from her predatory neighbors and her policy of religious liberty was upheld.

The Dominion of New England was to be short lived for the unpopular James II was deposed in 1688 by the "Glorious Revolution" which put William of Orange on the British throne and marked the beginning of constitutional monarchy in England. Soon thereafter Rhode Island and Connecticut resumed their old charters and Massachusetts Bay, which now included Plymouth Colony, was made a royal province under laws which provided liberty of conscience for all Protestants – a humiliating defeat for the masters of the Puritan church.

But Philip Sherman did not live quite long enough to see these victories for "Democratical" government and religious liberty. His life drew to its close in March 1687 in the town of Portsmouth which he had helped to establish almost half a century earlier. It had been an adventurous life and a good one; in it he had laid a sound foundation and set a fine example for all of us who were to follow him. With Sarah's help, he had reared to adulthood and marriage a goodly number of sons and daughters; he had acquired and cultivated considerable landholdings to leave to his children; he had associated himself with a sect of Christians which in many ways follows the precepts of Christ more closely than does any other; and – perhaps most important – he had played an active and constructive part in developing the government of Rhode Island. In that little colony, beset with the problems of maintaining its mere existence, he had no opportunity to benefit from the works of the giants of science, philosophy, literature, painting and music who flourished during his lifetime in England and on the Continent. Quite probably he had heard little or nothing of Galileo, Newton, Harvey, Locke, Milton, Rembrandt, Velasquez or Purcell. Life had called upon him for a different contribution and as an epitaph for Philip Sherman and the men with whom he worked we can do no better than quote the words of James Truslow Adams:

"... little Rhode Island had established its internal affairs on a firm and orderly basis and in spite of dire forebodings and every possible impediment thrown in its way by Massachusetts Bay had succeeded in proving that civil and religious liberty were not incompatible with a well-ordered state. Against all her enemies, internal and external, Rhode Island had won her way to intellectual freedom and had advanced along the path in which it has been the glory of the nation to follow..."



Northern Portion of PORTSMOUTH, R. I.

#### Fourth Generation in England:

Henry Sherman (Thomas, John, Thomas, ), born 1524, a clothier in Colchester, County Essex, England; married (1st) Agnes Butter (or Butler), who was buried, Oct. 14, 1580 at Dedham; (2nd) Marian (Smyth) Willson on June 5, 1581, widow of Edward Willson; and (3rd) Margery. Second and third wives had no issue. He died, 1590, in Dedham, England.

#### Children

i Alice,	b. about 1542	; m. Nicholas Fynce
ii Judith,	b. about 1545	; m. William Petfield, Oct. 27, 1566
iii HENRY,	b. 1545 (or 1547)	; m. Susan Lawrence, June 14, 1568
iv Edmund,	b. about 1548	; m. (1st) Anne Pellate, Apr. 25, 1569 m. (2nd) Anne Cleare, Sept. 11, 1584
v John,	b.	; buried, Oct. 16, 1576. Unmarried
vi Thomas,	b.	
vii Robert,	b. Feb. 6, 1560	; m. (1st) Barbara Browne, Dec. 9, 1583 m. (2nd) Bridget Janney

Henry's will was dated Jan. 20, 1590; probated July 25, 1590. He is called "Clothier". He mentions "son Henry" to whom he gives L20; also "children of son, Henry". He gives his "armour to sons, Henry and Robert". (Robert was a physician, having graduated from Trinity College, Cambridge.)

Gen. William Tecumseh Sherman's line is from Edmund, above, and his first wife.

NOTE. As indicated by its title, this book was written to tell the story of my Sherman and Mauman ancestors and for the Sherman genealogy I have, as stated, relied primarily on the research of Prof. Frank Dempster Sherman with some additions and changes.

One month after this book's publication, I was informed by the Rev. Gilbert H. Doane, editor of the NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, that his research has convinced him that the above HENRY 4 was not the son of Thomas 3 and that we cannot claim unbroken descent from the Shermans of Diss and Yaxley though he is "reasonably sure that Henry belonged somewhere in that family".

P. 100-101A SH HENRY

May 5, 1970

# Fifth Generation in England:

Henry Sherman (Henry, Thomas, John, Thomas, ), born in Dedham in 1545 ; a clothier in Dedham, County Essex, England; married Susan Lawrence.\* She was buried, Sept. 13, 1610, he on Aug. 28 1610. Both are buried in Dedham.

## Children:

- |      |             |                              |      |                             |
|------|-------------|------------------------------|------|-----------------------------|
| i    | Phebe,      | b. May 1, 1570               | : m. | Simon Fenn                  |
| ii   | Henry,      | Bap. in Dedham Aug. 26, 1571 | : m. | Marv                        |
|      |             |                              |      | Will proved Apr. 12, 1645   |
| iii  | SAMUEL,     | Bap. in Dedham Jan. 11, 1573 | : m. | Philippa Ward               |
| iv   | Ann         | b. Aug. 7, 1575              | : m. | (1st) Anthony Whiting,      |
|      | (or Susan), |                              |      | Jan. 8, 1594-95             |
|      |             |                              |      | m. (2nd) Thomas Wilkin      |
| v    | Daniel,     | b. ?                         | : m. | (1st) Christiana (Chapman)  |
|      |             |                              |      | Aug. 18, 1601               |
|      |             |                              |      | m. (2nd) Sarah Mitchell,    |
|      |             |                              |      | Apr. 23, 1622               |
|      |             |                              |      | Will proved, Apr. 15, 1634  |
| vi   | Nathaniel,  | Bap. in Dedham July 11, 1582 | : m. | Priscilla Angier            |
|      |             |                              |      | Will proved, Jan. 13, 1615  |
| vii  | John,       | Bap. in Dedham Aug. 17, 1585 | : m. | Grace Makin                 |
| viii | Ezekiel,    | b. July 25, 1589             | : m. | Rachel Alefounder           |
| ix   | Edmund,     | Bap. in Dedham 1590          | : m. | Judith Angier,              |
|      |             |                              |      | May 15, 1611                |
| x    | Mary,       | b. July 27, 1592             |      | (not mentioned in any will) |
| xi   | Martha,     | b.                           |      | (not mentioned in any will) |

Henry's will was dated Aug. 21, 1610; probated Sept. 12, 1610. He is called "Clothier".

Susan's will, dated Aug. 31, 1610; probated Sept. 12, 1610. She names "son Samuel", and "Mary, daughter of son Samuel".

Hon. Roger Sherman of Connecticut, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, was a descendant of John and Grace (Makin) Sherman whose son, Capt. John, settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, 1634.

\*"Henry Sherman & Susan Lawrance were maryed ye 14 Junij 1568." (Recorded at More, Co. Essex, England).

# Sixth Generation in England:

Samuel Sherman (Henry, Henry, Thomas, John, Thomas, ), born, 1573; a clothier, in Dedham, County Essex, England; married Philippa Ward about 1597; died, 1615, at Ardleigh, County Essex.

## Children: Baptismal dates, from Dedham Church register)

- |     |               |               |      |  |
|-----|---------------|---------------|------|--|
| i   | Mary,         | Oct. 2, 1599  | : m. |  |
| ii  | Samuel,       | Oct. 20, 1601 | : m. | (1st) Grace; died 1643, in Boston, Mass. |
|     |               |               |      | m. (2nd) Naomi (?)                       |
| iii | Henry (twin), | Oct. 20, 1601 | : m. | died young                               |
| iv  | Henry,        | June 25, 1603 | : m. | died, 1651, in Boston Mass.              |
| v   | Martha,       | June 24, 1604 | : m. |  |
| vi  | Sarah,        | Feb. 11, 1606 | : m. | buried, Dec. 5, 1612                     |
| vii | PHILIP,       | Feb. 5, 1610  | : m. | Sarah Odding                             |

Samuel's will was dated Jan. 20, 1616; probated, Mar. 2, 1616. He is called "Clothier". He names "sons, Samuel, Henry and Philip", and "daughters, Mary and Martha".

The three sons came to America in 1632 - 37.



## First Generation In America:

Philip Sherman, son of Samuel and Philippa (Ward) Sherman, born Feb. 5, 1610, in Dedham, County Essex, England; came to America in 1632/33 and in the same year married Sarah Odding, dau. of George and Margaret (Lang) Odding, who was born, in England, and died, about 1681, in Portsmouth, R.I. He died, Mar. 1687, in Portsmouth, R.I.

## Children:

i	Eber,	b. 1634;	m. Mary Wilcox	d. 1706
ii	Sarah,	b. 1636;	m. Thomas Mumford	
iii	Peleg,	b. 1638;	m. Elizabeth Lawton, July 25, 1657;	d. 1719
iv	Mary,	b. 1639;		d. 1644
v	Edmund,	b. 1641;	m. Dorcas (?)	d. 1719
vi	SAMSON,	b. Apr. 1642;	m. Isabel Tripp, Mar. 4, 1675;	d. 1716
vii	William,	b. 1643;		d. 1646
viii	John,	b. Aug. 1644;	m. Sarah Spooner, Nov. 13, 1674;	d. 1734
ix	Mary (2nd),	b. 1645;	m. Samuel Wilbur Dec. 3, 1674;	
x	Hannah,	b. 1647;	m. William Chase	
xi	Samuel,	b. 1648;	m. Martha Tripp, Feb. 23, 1681;	d. 1717
xii	Benjamin,	b. 1650;	m. Hannah Mowry, Dec. 3, 1674;	d. 1719
xiii	Philip,	b. Oct. 1, 1652;	m. Benjamin Chase about 1673	

Philip settled first in Roxbury, Mass., where he was admitted freeman, May 14, 1634. Involved in the Anne Hutchinson troubles he, with many others, was banished from the state in 1638. He removed to Rhode Island in 1638 and was one of the original settlers of the Colony. For many years he served as the Secretary of the Council in Portsmouth. He owned large tracts of land in Rhode Island and in Dartmouth, Mass.

His will was signed July 31, 1681; probated, Mar. 22, 1687, Portsmouth. Gives "to wife, Sarah; to sons, Eber, Peleg, Edmund, Samson, John, Samuel and Benjamin; and to daughters, Sarah Mumford, Mary Wilbur, Hannah Chase and Phelep Chase."

Son, Samuel Sherman, Executor

## Second Generation In America

Samson Sherman (Philip), b. Mar. 4, 1675, in Portsmouth (Paine) Tripp, who was b. died, 1716, in Portsmouth, R.I.

## Children:

i	Philip,	b. Jan. 16, 1676;	
ii	Sarah,	b. Sept. 24, 1677;	
iii	Alice,	b. Jan. 12, 1680;	
iv	Samson,	b. Jan. 28, 1682;	
v	Abiel,	b. Oct. 15, 1684;	
vi	Isabel,	b. 1686;	
vii	JOB,	b. Nov. 8, 1687;	

Elected "Constable", Apr. 5

Samson inherited one-half adjoining his own farm; also kind and swine"; and also those Indians which we join

His will was signed Nov. 5 Gives to sons - Philip, Abiel, Tibbetts and Isabel Baker Philip.

OUR SHERMAN FAMILY

Reference): "TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS" (1969) by Bertha L. Stratton

DEDHAM, ESSEX COUNTY, ENGLAND, PARISH REGISTER EXTRACTS RE SHERMAN FAMILY

PAGE 63

SET FORTH THEREIN ARE MARRIAGES from 1566 to 1694 included:

Apr 25 1570	EDMUND SHARMAN and Ann Pellatte	1582 HENRY SHERMAN wid'r. and
Sep 11 1584	EDMUND SHERMAN and Ann Cleare	Maryan Wilson, widow
May 15 1601	JOHN <u>ANGER</u> and Ann SHERMAN	(This was 2nd wife)
May 15 1611	EDMUND SHERMAN and Judith <u>ANGER</u> (ANGIER ?)	
	(30 years missing; resumed in 1656)	
	(NOTE: Our EDMUND SHERMAN born Dedham, England ca 1572	
	was in Wethersfield, Connecticut by 1635)	

(NOTE: THIS HENRY<sup>5</sup> and EDMUND<sup>5</sup>  
were BROTHERS, sons of HENRY<sup>4</sup>):

BAPTISMS commencing 1560/1561 included:

BORN TO HENRY SHERMAN JR. (wf. Susan Lawrance)	BORN TO EDMUND SHERMAN-WIFE (the elder) (by first wife Ann Pellatte)
1.= 1570 May 1 PHEBE, <sup>6</sup> dau of Henry Sherman, jr.	1. 4 Sep 1570 HENRY, son
2.= 1571 Aug 26 HENRY, <sup>6</sup> son of Henry Jr	2. 1575 Oct 9 ANN, dau (Ann
3.= 1572/3 Jan 11 SAMUEL son of Henry Sherman	3. 1576/7 Mar 3 RICHARD, son-(Sherman
4.= 1575 8 Aug SUSAN, dau of Henry Sherman	4. 1580/1 Mch 7 ANNA - (Anne Sherman)
5.= 1580 June 19 NATHL., son of Henry and Susan	
6.= 1582 July 11 NATHL., son of Henry Sherman, <sup>8</sup> Jr.	8 June 1584 BURIAL of ANNE, <sup>8</sup> wife EDMUND SHARMAN
7.= 1585 Aug 17 JOHN., son of Henry Sherman, jr.	(by 2nd wife Ann Cleare)
8.= 1592 July 27 MARY d.y. (HIATUS from Jan 1587/8 to 29 Sept 1590)	5. 1590/1 Feb 17 SUSAN (Ann)
	6. 1597 Mch 27 BENJAMIN
	7. 1598/9 Mch 20 MARY (Ann)

(NOTE HERE: If ours is EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. "born at Dedham, England ca 1572 who "supposedly" married JOAN MAKIN (dau of Tobias Makin of Fingrinhoe)" his birth to EDMUND SHERMAN, SR. and Anne Pellatte (who were married 25 Apr 1570) is not in the list of BAPTISMS at Dedham above although they have in the list the birth of his older brother (their first child) HENRY ba 4 Sept 1570, buried at age 16 1 Jan 1586. BUT the birth of EDMUND in 1572 is not in above list.

(ALSO NOTE HERE: The marriages of EDMUND SHERMAN (1570 and 1584) are both listed in the parish records, 1) Ann Pellatte and 2nd) Ann Cleare. BUT the marriage of EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. to JOAN MAKIN about 1598/1599 is not listed in these parish records. A possible explanation is the practice prevalent at the time was for (1) the marriages to take place in the bride's parish (to wit: Fingrinhoe) and (2) the mother would often take the first child back to her parish for baptism; in this family our EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. was not the first child, but he was the second child and the Parish records of Fingrinhoe may reveal this marriage record and the baptism of Edmund, Jr.)

BORN TO HENRY (prob. #6)	BORN TO SAMUEL	BORN TO EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. - WIFE
1602/3 Jan 25 HENRY 7	1601 Oct 20	1. 1599 Oct 23 EDMUND
1611 June 25 EDWARD	1601 - HENRY (twin?)	2. 1601 Sep 15 ANN
	1603 - MARTHA	3. 1603 Dec 13 JOAN
	1605 - SEARA (SARAH?)	4. 1606 Apr 1 HESTER
	1610 - PHILIP	5. 1608 Oct 16 RICHARD (JONE)
		6. 1611 Sep 17 BEZALEEL
		7. 1616 Jun 18 (child)
		8. 1618 Jul 12 SAMUEL

(HIATUS of about 18 years from 1620 to 1638) Therefore, any successive births listed are not pertinent to our SHERMAN research inasmuch as our SHERMAN (HESTER WARD) was in Mass. and married to ANDREW WARD by the early 1630's & our Capt. JOHN SMITH was here by 1636.)

(NOTE: Dedham Parish Registers have only SEVEN of FOURTEEN children of EDMUND SHERMAN, SR., SEVEN by each wife; all 14 are listed in "SHERMAN GENEALOGY" by Thomas T. Sherman pub 1920 this country; and only 8 of the 11 children of HENRY<sup>5</sup> & Susan are in above list.)

The Will of SAMUEL SHERMAN dated 1643, proved 1644 has following bequests to his deceased brother's (EDMUND, JR.'s) family members: "to my loving sister SHERMAN, EDMOND's widow 20 shillings and to her son; SAMUEL ten pounds, to her son JOHN SHERMAN twenty shillings and to her daughters GRACE and ESTER WARD and her youngest daughter, to either of them twenty shillings." Thus these 3 children are accounted for although their baptisms do not show in the Parish Register of Dedham: JOHN born 1613, GRACE born 1614/1615 and the 11th and last child, a daughter. GRACE and HESTER were the next two youngest daughters.

(NOTE: Above list of EDMUND (JR.) & JOAN SHERMAN's CHILDREN OMITS THE FOLLOWING: (Rev.) JOHN SHERMAN b 26 Dec 1613 GRACE SHERMAN ba 18 June 1614-1615. There is a 5-year period above with no children listed in the BAPTISMS of the parish record at DEDHAM; yet lists here show the birth of JOHN (1613) and the birth of GRACE (1614-1615) PLUS an 11th child, a daughter, mentioned in Will of SAMUEL SHERMAN, her uncle.)

CONTINUING WITH "TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS"

Unfortunately the Baptisms in this book only commence in 1560 whereas the SHERMANS mentioned in "THE SHERMAN GENEALOGY" (1920 by Thomas Townsend Sherman) commence with THOMAS SHERMAN who died in 1493! Inasmuch as he had only two children (JOHN AND AGNES) he may have died young but in any event would have been born possibly as early as 1470, almost 100 years before the Baptisms in the Stratton book. (Cromwell ordered parish records kept from about 1538.)  
1570 birth of "HENRY son of EDMUND SHERMAN" (the elder ?)

NOTE: BAPTISMS list 1571 birth of "HENRY son of HENRY SHERMAN, JR."

There were continuous uses of these first names THOMAS, JOHN, HENRY AND EDMUND in several branches of the same generation so it is somewhat difficult to keep their relationships separated, i.e.

SHERMANS OF YAXLEY:

The 1st THOMAS<sup>1</sup> had only 1 son: JOHN<sup>2</sup>

The 1st JOHN SHERMAN<sup>2</sup> had only one son THOMAS<sup>3</sup> (named for his father) !! - he had a total of NINE sons:

a 1st son he named THOMAS<sup>4</sup>, (III)

a 3rd son he named JOHN<sup>4</sup> named for his grandfather; therefore JOHN II

a 4th son he named HENRY<sup>4</sup> (the 1st one)

SHERMANS OF DEDHAM:

HENRY, (SR.)<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN OF DEDHAM or "The elder of Colchester" had 4 or 5 sons:  
Wife: AGNES BUTTER

- |                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| 1. HENRY (JR.) <sup>5</sup>          | (STRATTON's 3rd book also designates this one                            |
| 2. EDMUND <sup>5</sup> (the 1st one) | as HENRY <sup>4</sup> although she has concluded he is not               |
| 3. JOHN <sup>5</sup> (JOHN III)      | identical to the HENRY <sup>4</sup> who was son of THOMAS <sup>3</sup> . |
| 4. THOMAS <sup>5</sup> (the IV)      | And she lists only 4 sons for this HENRY <sup>4</sup> --                 |
| 5. ROBERT <sup>5</sup>               | excluding THOMAS.)   |

THIS EDMUND SHERMAN<sup>5</sup>, SR. had 7 sons he named: HENRY<sup>5</sup> (& wife Susan Lawrance) had 7 sons he named:  
(wives: ANNE PELLATTE & ANNE CLERE)

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. HENRY <sup>6</sup>                       | 1. HENRY <sup>6</sup> (III) ba 1571                 |
| 2. EDMUND <sup>6</sup> (JR.) m. JOAN MAKIN* | 2. SAMUEL <sup>6</sup> ba 1572/73                   |
| 3. RICHARD <sup>6</sup>                     | 3. DANIEL <sup>6</sup> ba 1578 (Another NATHANIEL   |
| 4. BEZALIEL <sup>6</sup>                    | 4. NATHANIEL <sup>6</sup> ba 1582 b.d.1580)         |
| 5. SAMUEL <sup>6</sup> (the first one)      | 5. JOHN <sup>6</sup> ba 1585 m. GRACE MAKIN*        |
| 6. JOHN <sup>6</sup> (would be JOHN IV)     | 6. EZEKIEL <sup>6</sup> ba 1587                     |
| 7. BENJAMIN <sup>6</sup>                    | 7. EDMUND <sup>6</sup> ba 1589/90 (m. Judith Anger) |

THE ABOVE EDMUND SHERMAN<sup>6</sup>, JR. had: \*JOAN MAKIN and GRACE MAKIN were sisters.

- | Sons                                    | Daughters                            |  |
|---|--------------------------------------|--|
| 1. EDMUND <sup>7</sup> III              | ANN                                  | The above JOHN <sup>6</sup> & GRACE SHERMAN had 2 sons |
| 2. RICHARD <sup>7</sup>                 | JOAN                                 | 1. (CAPT.) JOHN <sup>7</sup> - m. Martha Palmer        |
| 3. BEZALEEL <sup>7</sup>                | HESTER <sup>7</sup> (m. Andrew Ward) | 2. RICHARD SHERMAN                                     |
| 4. JOHN (Rev.) <sup>7</sup> would be V) | GRACE                                |  |
| 5. SAMUEL <sup>7</sup>                  |                                      |  |

OUR LINES OF DESCENT IN THE SHERMAN FAMILY ARE FROM TWO DIFFERENT LINES:  
from HESTER SHERMAN WARD above and from CAPT. JOHN & MARTHA (PALMER) SHERMAN.  
The EDMUND (the elder) and HENRY SHERMAN, JR. having sons in the years 1570 and 1571 were brothers, the two oldest sons of HENRY SHERMAN, SR. (This EDMUND AND HENRY, JR. were probably born Dedham about 1547 and 1549-1550. Our ancestor was the EDMUND SHERMAN, SR. who in turn named his 1st son HENRY and his 2nd son EDMUND (JR.) The latter named his first son EDMUND SHERMAN (III), whose daughter was our HESTER who married ANDREW WARD.)

BURIALS EXTRACTED FROM DEDHAM PARISH REGISTER included:

1563/4 Mar 16 THOMAS SHERMAN This JOHN was  
1576 Oct 16 JOHN SHERMAN, son of HENRY SHARMAN, "the elder". (younger bro to our  
1580 Oct 14 AGNES ux. HENRY SHARMAN "the elder" EDMUND, SR.)  
(mother of our EDMUND SHERMAN, SR.)  
1584 June 8 ANNE ux. EDMUND SHARMAN (1st wife of our EDMUND SHERMAN, SR.)  
(nee ANNE PELLATTE)  
1600 Dec 22 EDMUND SHERMAN the elder (son of HENRY SHERMAN, SR. & AGNES.) (Father  
of our EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. His Will dtd 1599; proved 1601, Apr.)  
1610 Aug. 28 HENRY SHERMAN, the elder (there are so many HENRY SHERMANS, it  
1610 Sep. 13 Wife of HENRY SHERMAN the elder (is difficult to know which this one is.)

Mrs. Stratton adds: (page 67) "Some years later in his preparation of his SHERMAN GENEALOGY (1920) THOMAS TOWNSEND SHERMAN had many searches made in England. Much of this was done by the distinguished genealogists, J. HENRY LEA and J. R. HUTCHINSON, who extracted entries from the parish registers of Dedham which were printed in Mr. SHERMAN's article "ADDITIONAL FACTS ABOUT THE ENGLISH SHERMANS", April 1913 issue of THE REGISTER, vol. 67, pp. 155-157." (However, these date from 1650 and are of no help to us.)

(Aug. 1982)

THE SHERMANS OF YAXLEY

Including HENRY<sup>4</sup> OF YAXLEY

1. THOMAS SHERMAN<sup>1</sup> who mar. AGNES. died 1493; born prob. 1470; 2 children;
2. i. JOHN SHERMAN<sup>2</sup> m. AGNES FULLER. died 1504; ii. AGNES m. Thos. Clerk(e)
3. THOMAS SHERMAN<sup>3</sup> (11) m. Jane Waller ca 1512; sister MARGERY LOCKWOOD
3. THOMAS SHERMAN<sup>3</sup> (11) b prob ca 1490, m. Jane Waller (dau of John Waller of Wortham, Suffolk) prob ca 1512; he d 1551 after May 5. His Will is dated 20 Jan 1550/1; was proved at London 16 Nov 1551. All 9 of his sons are mentioned in the father's Will. JANE, his widow, m. (2nd) \_\_\_\_\_ GARDINER (pos. John); she died 1573; All sons except WILLIAM are mentioned her Will. They had 9 sons:
  - i Thomas Sherman<sup>4</sup> (111) of Yaxley, Gent., eldest son and heir, b. ca 1514; m. (1) Elizabeth Yaxley; m. (2) Barbara Whetcroft; d. 1585;
  - ii Richard Sherman of London and of Diss. County of Norfolk Gent., second son, m. Margaret (Lane?); he died Mar 1587. Will contained many bequests to nephews and nieces; probably left no issue.
  - iii John Sherman of Bramford, Suffolk and of St. Matthew's Parish, Ipswich; m. Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_ 1st. Gent. m. (2) Mary; widow of Thomas Whiting 1573; 3rd. Margaret \_\_\_\_\_; he was bur St. Matthew's 10 Sept 1587. He and Elizabeth had children: Robert, Nicholas, James, Margaret, Dennys, Elizabeth, Ann, Jane.
  - iv HENRY SHERMAN<sup>4</sup> had son THOMAS<sup>5</sup> who was of Diss, Norfolk Co. Mentioned in his father's Will (1550/1551) as being under 21; therefore, born prob. between 1530-1533
  - v William Sherman of St. Olave, Southwark and Ipswich, m. Faith Lany, dau of Richard Lany ("citizen and scrivener" of London and Margaret, his wife); William was "a grocer of London", later of St. Stephen's parish, Ipswich; died 1 June 1583.
  - vi Anthony Sherman of Roydon, Norfolk County, m. Marie \_\_\_\_\_
  - vii Francis (ffraunces) Sherman of Blownorton, Norfolk; m. Sybil Grey, dau of Thomas Grey (or Gray) of Goswold Hall, Trandeston.
  - viii Bartholomew (Barthilmewe) Sherman m. Elizabeth \_\_\_\_\_
  - ix James Sherman of Yaxley, Suffolk; m. Margerie \_\_\_\_\_

T.T. SHERMAN's GENEALOGY (1920) concluded the above HENRY<sup>4</sup> was our ANCESTOR but the research done by Bertha Stratton (also a Sherman descendant) indicates he could not have been our HENRY<sup>4</sup> "of DEDHAM." She published: 1st "SHERMAN AND ALLIED FAMILIES" (1951); 2nd "NEW LIGHT ON HENRY SHERMAN OF DEDHAM" (1954) and "TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS" (1969). Her research has also answered other questions we had: i.e. Was JOAN MAKIN the wife of our EDMUND<sup>6</sup>? Who was the JUDITH ANGER who married (another) EDMUND<sup>6</sup>? Who was the wife of HENRY<sup>5</sup>--SUSAN HILLS or SUSAN LAWRENCE? Who were parents of our CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN's WIFE, MARTHA PALMER?

HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN OF DEDHAM AND COLCHESTER, ENGLAND

As yet we do not know the names of the parents and grandparents of our HENRY SHERMAN born about 1511/1512 so we commence our pedigree with him. However, according to the Stratton book, he "was of Yaxley, Suffolk manorial family of ancient arms". Stratton's third book sets out Parish Register records for Dedham commencing with 1560 which is too late for the listing of the children of our HENRY<sup>4</sup>. (Rev. Canon M.M. Martin, Dean of Colchester, Essex County, could find no SHERMANS in earlier Parish Registers (prior to 1560), commenced in 1538 on orders of Thomas Cromwell.) BUT this earlier period covers the marriage of our HENRY<sup>4</sup> to AGNES BUTTER and the birth of their children; HENRY<sup>4</sup> married AGNES (probably of the BUTTER family) ca 1542 and all his children were by this wife although his widow named in his Will was "MARGERIE my wife" (according to T.T. SHERMAN's Genealogy his 3rd wife). Page 66 of the Stratton book has these burials:

Oct 16 1576 JOHN son of HENRY SHARMAN "the elder"  
 Oct 14 1580 AGNES ux<sup>r</sup>. HENRY SHARMAN "the elder"  
 Aug 28 1610 HENRY SHERMAN "the elder"  
 Sep 13 1610 WIFE OF HENRY SHERMAN "the elder"

Following the death of our HENRY<sup>4</sup> (1511-1590) the term "the elder" was applied to successive HENRYS; thus only the first two above would have reference to our HENRY<sup>4</sup> as his Will was proved 25 July 1590 although his burial was not noted in the Dedham-Colchester Parish Registers received by Mrs. Stratton. He had named his first son HENRY<sup>5</sup> (ba ca 1547) who married SUSAN LAWRENCE about 1568 who named his first son HENRY<sup>6</sup> (ba ca 1571). HENRY<sup>5</sup> had a younger brother, EDMUND who named his first son HENRY<sup>6</sup> (ba 1570) also! But this latter HENRY<sup>6</sup> died 1586, age 16; Page 68 has this burial: "1586/7 HENRY son of EDMUND SHERMAN 1 January."



TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS (continued)  
WITH HENRY<sup>4</sup> OF DEDHAM

Attached will be a 6-page Addendum being excerpts from some pertinent Wills of the SHERMANS taken from the Stratton book and the T.T.Sherman Genealogy. According to the latter our HENRY<sup>4</sup> had married 2nd Marion WILLSON, widow of Edmund WILLSON at Dedham 5 June 1581; she had been Marion Smyth and had married Edmund Willson in 1563. HENRY's Will mentions only three sons, HENRY, EDMUND and ROBERT; the burials reveal the death of one son JOHN on 16 Oct 1576. Neither his Will nor the parish registers reveal anything about a son THOMAS which is concluded by Mrs. Stratton to be proof that he had no son with this name. T.T. Sherman felt a son THOMAS could have predeceased the father in 1586 accounting for no mention of him in the father's Will. Children of HENRY<sup>4</sup> and AGNES SHERMAN (set out in the Stratton book were):

1. HENRY<sup>4</sup> the father who married AGNES BUTTER about 1542"

- i ALICE SHERMAN b ca 1540, m. NICHOLAS FYNCE; she died ca 1580 (probably a misprint and should have been 1543 since the next child was born ca 1545); her husband was bur. 1580; 7 children.
- ii JUDITH SHERMAN b ca 1545, m. WILLIAM PETFIELD 27 Oct 1566; she was bur at Dedham 9 Apr 1601 (age 56); 8 children.
- 2. iii HENRY<sup>5</sup> SHERMAN (Jr.) b ca 1546, m. 14 June 1568 SUSAN LAWRENCE at Moze in Essex County (Parish Registers of Moze, p.27); about 10 miles southeast of Dedham. He was a rich clothier; 11 children.
- 2A. iv EDMUND SHERMAN (SR.) b ca 1548 Dedham, m. 25 Apr 1570 ANNE PELLATTE at Dedham (she d. there and was bur. 8 June 1584); he m. 2nd ANNE CLERE 11 Sep 1584; seven children by each wife; total 14 children.
- v JOHN SHERMAN ba ca 1556; Burials of Dedham Parish Registers have this: "1576 Oct. 16 JOHN son of HENRY SHARMAN the elder" (Page 66) he would have been about age 20 and probably left no issue. His nuncupative (oral) Will was witnessed by Rychard CLARKE and "HENRY SHARMAN the yonger" presumably his older brother then age 30.
- vi ROBERT<sup>5</sup> SHERMAN b 6 Feb 1560/1561 of Dedham, Colchester and London. m. 1) BARBARA BROWNE at Dedham; 3 children; m. 2) BRIDGET JENNEY; 2 sons: ROBERT and RICHARD. Children by 1st wife: JANE, MARY and ANNE. He died in London Jan. 1602; 1575 had obtained B.A. at Trinity College, Cambridge; Fellow of College of Physicians.

This additional research has revealed that we are descended from two separate lines of these SHERMANS to wit: from the above HENRY<sup>5</sup>'s 8th child JOHN<sup>6</sup> who married GRACE MAKIN; and (as shown on my previous pedigree chart) from his brother EDMUND's 2nd son EDMUND<sup>6</sup>, who m. JOAN MAKIN. CHILDREN OF

2. HENRY<sup>5</sup> and SUSAN LAWRENCE SHERMAN

2A. EDMUND<sup>5</sup> and 1st wife ANNE PELLATTE (7)  
and 2nd wife ANNE CLERE (7)

- i HENRY<sup>6</sup> ba 4 Sep 1570; bur 1 Jan 1586
- 3A. ii EDMUND<sup>6</sup> ba ca 1572 (REMOVED TO N.E.)
- iii ANN SHERMAN; d.y.
- iv RICHARD ba 1577; WENT TO NEW ENG.
- v ba 1579; bur 4 Feb 1579.
- vi ANNA(ANN) ba 1581; m. JOHN ANGER, \* brother to PRISCILLA & JUDITH ANGER.
- vii BEZALIEL ba 1583; m. PRISCILLA BURGESS.
- viii SARAH ba 4 July 1587 m. THOS. WARNER.
- ix ANNA SHERMAN m. 1610 RICHARD BACKLER.
- x SUSAN SHERMAN ba 1591, d. unm.
- xi SAMUEL<sup>6</sup> m. ESTER BURGESS
- xii JOHN<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN, m.
- xiii BENJAMIN<sup>6</sup> ba 1597; m. and had child. bur 1647.
- xiv MARY ba Dedham 1599; m. ANDREW BACON CAME TO NEW ENGLAND

- 3. viii JOHN<sup>6</sup> ba 17 Aug 1585, m. GRACE MAKIN
- ix EZEKIEL<sup>6</sup> ba 1587, m. RACHEL ALEFOUNDER
- x EDMUND<sup>6</sup> m. JUDITH ANGER\*
- xi MARY SHERMAN<sup>6</sup> ba Dedham 27 July 1592 died young.

(EXPLANATION OF NUMBERING THE GENERATIONS:

The T.T.Sherman "SHERMAN GENEALOGY" has and the STRATTON books retain the numbering system down from THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup>, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and our HENRY<sup>4</sup> even though Mrs. Stratton seems to have proved that the first three WERE NOT our direct ancestors; that in reality then (since we do not know the parents of our HENRY<sup>4</sup>) we should be numbering ours as HENRY<sup>1</sup>, HENRY (JR.) and EDMUND (SR.) as <sup>2</sup>, JOHN and EDMUND (JR.) as <sup>3</sup> (for 2nd and 3rd generations) and Capt. JOHN SHERMAN and HESTER SHERMAN as <sup>4</sup>. However, it was felt preferable to also retain the original numbering system in the body of this Resume BUT add at the left-hand margin the number denoting the actual generations for our ancestors as they now exist (until such time as we may learn the names of the parents and grandparents of our HENRY<sup>4</sup>.)

TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS (continued)

THE FOLLOWING PAGES WILL CONTINUE WITH OUR DIRECT LINEAGES FROM THE TWO GRANDCHILDREN OF HENRY<sup>4</sup>: JOHN<sup>6</sup> (8th child of HENRY<sup>5</sup> and SUSAN (LAWRENCE) SHERMAN and EDMUND<sup>6</sup> (2nd child of EDMUND<sup>5</sup> and his first wife, ANNE PELLATTE):

3. JOHN<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN of Dedham and Great Horkesley, County of Essex, England  
bap Dedham 17 Aug 1585, m. before 14 May 1610 to GRACE MAKIN, sister  
of JOAN MAKIN (wife of his first cousin EDMUND<sup>6</sup>), dau of TOBIAS MAKIN;  
he was bur 24 Jan 1616, age 30, at Gr.Horkesley. Two children:
- i (Capt.) JOHN<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN bap Gr.Horkesley 3 Sept 1612; emigrated to  
Watertown, Mass. about 1636 with mother, step-father and half-  
sister; m. MARTHA PALMER (dau of WILLIAM PALMER of Watertown)  
about 1637; d.
  - ii RICHARD<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN bap 7 Aug 1614; remained in England and was there  
1662 time of inventory of mother's estate.

GRACE (MAKIN) SHERMAN, the widow m. (2d) THOMAS ROGERS and their dau ELIZABETH  
was born in Dedham (she m. DANIEL SMITH) and bap there 16 Nov 1617. GRACE  
ROGERS, her husband and daughter and older son JOHN SHERMAN emigrated to  
Watertown, Mass. together about 1636, when JOHN<sup>7</sup> was about age 24. However,  
The "Sherman Genealogy" by Charles Pomeroy Sherman (p.16) states that Capt.  
JOHN SHERMAN came to this country in the "Elizabeth" with EDMUND<sup>6</sup> (his  
father's first cousin), husband of JOAN MAKIN, and the latter's three sons:  
EDMUND<sup>7</sup>, Rev. JOHN<sup>7</sup> and Hon. SAMUEL<sup>7</sup>.

CAPTAIN JOHN<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN's direct descendants included the Hon. ROGER<sup>10</sup> SHERMAN  
'whose greatest skill in diplomacy was shown in his part in the drafting of  
the Constitution' and Declaration of Independence, both of which he signed.  
His descent and ours were identical down through the 7th generation; his was:  
Hon. ROGER<sup>10</sup>, WILLIAM<sup>9</sup>, JOSEPH<sup>8</sup>, CAPTAIN JOHN<sup>7</sup>, JOHN<sup>6</sup>, HENRY<sup>5</sup>, HENRY<sup>4</sup> but  
as yet we do not know who the first three generations were. (JOSEPH's older  
sister, MARTHA SHERMAN married FRANCIS BOWMAN; they were our ancestors.)  
Like most of his day he was self-educated; a statesman, mathematician,  
judge, mayor, poet, Senator. On his own astronomical figuring he made  
and published almanacs. He was Treasurer of Yale University which gave  
him an honorary M.A. He m. 17 Nov 1749 ELIZABETH HARTWELL who died 1760;  
he m. (2d) REBECCA PRESCOTT 12 May 1763; he had children by both wives.

Another famous descendant was GENERAL SIDNEY<sup>12</sup> SHERMAN (Micah<sup>11</sup>, Samuel<sup>10</sup>,  
John<sup>9</sup>, Joseph<sup>8</sup>, Captain JOHN<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN): SIDNEY, his parents and grand-  
parents resided in Marlborough, Massachusetts, where SIDNEY was orphaned  
at an early age; at 16 he went to Concord to school; thereafter he resided  
in Ohio, Boston, New York, and Newport, Kentucky at which latter place he  
was captain of the Kentucky Militia's volunteer company. He was supportive  
of the Texans in their struggle with Mexico; converted his financial assets  
into a large sum of money; outfitted a volunteer group of fifty men, giving  
them rigid military training. "It was SIDNEY SHERMAN who first raised the  
immortal battle cry 'REMEMBER THE ALAMO,' on April 21, 1836 when he led a  
charge throwing Santa Ana's veterans into confusion and defeat." He was  
commissioned a General by the President of the Texas Republic and was the  
father of the world-renowned Texas Rangers.

And last but equally important was GENERAL WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN<sup>13</sup> of Civil  
War fame (Hon. Charles R.<sup>12</sup>, TAYLOR<sup>11</sup>, DANIEL<sup>10</sup>, JOHN<sup>9</sup>, JOHN<sup>8</sup>, SAMUEL<sup>7</sup>, EDMUND<sup>6</sup>,  
EDMUND<sup>5</sup>, HENRY<sup>4</sup> - first three generations as yet unknown). Through the 6th  
generation General SHERMAN and our line are identical; his 7th generation  
lineage is through Hon. SAMUEL<sup>7</sup> (1618-1700), (younger brother to our HESTER  
SHERMAN<sup>7</sup> who married ANDREW WARD). He served through the "War of the Rebellion"  
retiring 8 Feb 1884; he was twice Secretary of War. LL.D. Dartmouth 1866;  
Yale 1876; Princeton 1878; "A gentleman, a scholar, a great commander, an  
orator and a good citizen." He was born Lancaster, Ohio 1820 and died at  
New York 14 Feb 1891.

NOTE: Hon. ROGER SHERMAN and General SIDNEY SHERMAN descend through Captain  
JOHN SHERMAN<sup>7</sup>, son of JOHN<sup>6</sup> and GRACE MAKIN SHERMAN; whereas General WILLIAM  
TECUMSEH SHERMAN descends in the 7th generation from HON. SAMUEL SHERMAN who  
was a son of EDMUND (JR.)<sup>6</sup> and JOAN MAKIN SHERMAN (the wives were sisters);  
JOHN<sup>6</sup> and EDMUND<sup>6</sup> were first cousins! And we are descended from both.

GENERATION:

3. JOHN<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN ba 17 Aug 1585, m. GRACE MAKIN, had 2 sons and died at age 30:

4. JOHN<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN (Capt.) bap at Great Horkesley, Essex County, England, 3 Sept 1612 (located about 5½ miles southwest of Dedham, the ancient home of the SHERMANS); his father was buried there 24 Jan 1615/16 when he was a small boy. With his mother, step-father THOMAS ROGERS and half-sister, ELIZABETH he emigrated to New England about 1636, settling at Watertown, Mass, and was a freeman there 17 May 1637. 1652-1653 - commissioner; numerous times from 1636 to 1682 was a selectman; 1664-1666 was Town Clerk; military career: first a "sergeant of train band. Ensign. Lieutenant. Appointed Captain by the General Court 11 June 1680. 1660 Steward of Harvard College; schoolmaster 1677-1681;" Deputy to General Court 1651, 1653 and 1663; ca 1637 m. MARTHA PALMER (dau of William Palmer of Watertown, emigrant from Great Ormsby, Norfolk Co., England; who was made freeman 13 Mar 1638/39; afterwards lived in Newbury and Hampton, and died 1647).

(Pope's "Pioneers of Mass.": WILLIAM PALMER, yeoman, one of those licensed by General Court to begin a plantation at Hampton 1638; 1645 he conveyed all his property in Hampton and Newbury to JOHN SHERMAN and MARTHA, his dau, SHERMAN's wife, in lieu of estate in Great Ormsby, Eng. which was her inheritance. "JOHN and MARTHA SHERMAN (subsequently) sold all their share in his estate to their youngest son, JOSEPH in 1661. WILLIAM PALMER was divorced by the General Court 19 Oct 1650 from his wife, ELINOR, who had married another man in England." Bond's "Settlers of Watertown": WILLIAM PALMER married (2nd?) GRACE, widow of THOMAS ROGERS who had died at Watertown 1638, mother of his son-in-law, Capt. JOHN SHERMAN, as her 3rd husband (apparently before above divorce date of 1650). GRACE MAKIN (SHERMAN, ROGERS) PALMER married as her 4th husband ROGER PORTER as her Will is signed GRACE PORTER. PALMER had in addition to one dau, MARTHA PALMER SHERMAN, 3 sons: Edward, Christopher and Stephen PALMER. WILLIAM PALMER died 1647.)

CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN died 25 Jan 1690, age 78; his widow, MARTHA, died 7 Feb 1700, Watertown, Mass. Their children were:

- i JOHN<sup>8</sup> b 2 Nov 1638; wounded in King Philip's War 19 Dec 1675 and believed died in R.I. from his wounds.
- 5. ii MARTHA<sup>8</sup> SHERMAN b 21 Feb 1639/1640, married 26 Sept 1661 at Watertown, FRANCIS BOWMAN (b. 1630, son of NATHANIEL AND ANNE BOWMAN, father born 1608 England; Francis died Watertown 1687). Their children were:
  - 1) FRANCIS BOWMAN<sup>9</sup> b 1662, d. 1744; m. twice
  - 2) JOHN BOWMAN<sup>9</sup> b 19 Feb 1663.
  - 3) MARTHA BOWMAN<sup>9</sup> b 2 Mar 1666/7, d. 1667.
  - 6. 4) NATHANIEL<sup>9</sup> BOWMAN b 9 Feb 1668/9, m. 16 Dec 1692 ANNE BARNARD (dau of JOHN AND SARAH (FLEMMING) BARNARD) born 24 Aug 1670, d 16 Sept 1757; he died 30 June 1748; they had 7 daughters: MARY BOWMAN b 1693 m. SAMUEL GARFIELD of Watertown who were parents of ELIAKIM GARFIELD whose dau
  - 7. \*ANNA GARFIELD ba 1762 m. PHINEAS LAMB, was their oldest.
  - 8. 5) JOSEPH BOWMAN<sup>9</sup> b. 18 May 1674; m. Phebe; d. 8 Apr 1762.
  - 9. 6) ANNA BOWMAN b 19 Sept 1675.
  - 7) SAMUEL<sup>9</sup> BOWMAN b 14 Aug 1679; d. 1746; m. twice
  - 8) JONATHAN<sup>9</sup> BOWMAN b ca 1682.
  - 9) MARTHA<sup>9</sup> BOWMAN b 4 Apr 1685.
- iii MARY<sup>8</sup> SHERMAN b 25 Mar 1643, m. Timothy Hawkins, Jr. d. 1667.
- iv ELISHABAH<sup>8</sup> SHERMAN b. \_\_\_\_\_, d 1649
- v SARAH<sup>8</sup> SHERMAN b 17 Jan 1647/8; d. 1667 unm.
- vi JOSEPH<sup>8</sup> SHERMAN b 14 May 1650, m. 18 Nov 1673 ELIZABETH WINSHIP (b. 1652); she died bef. her husband; he died intestate 20 Jan 1730/1 at Watertown; eleven children; their descendants in 10th generation included Hon. ROGER SHERMAN who assisted in drafting Declaration of Independence and our Constitution and signed both for Connecticut; also General SIDNEY SHERMAN (see page 5 hereof).

- 10. \*PHINEAS and ANNA (GARFIELD) LAMB's two daughters, DOLLIE (born 1781/1783 Rutland, Mass.) married 1803 NATHAN PALMER and in 1810 her sister NANCY (born Nov 1791)
- 11. married his younger brother, JOHN C. PALMER; at the time the LAMB family resided in Wells, Vermont, and the NATHANIEL & SARAH PALMER family in adjoining Granville, Washington County, New York. (See page 6A) NATHAN AND JOHN C. PALMER were two sons of RW veteran, NATHANIEL PALMER, who in turn was a son of Capt. FENNER PALMER, RW soldier.

MAIDEN NAME OF WIFE OF CAPTAIN JOHN SHERMAN, MARTHA PALMER

RE: (5) on preceding page: PAGE 430 of Vol. I

CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN ... m. MARTHA, dr. of ROGER AND GRACE PORTER, (SEE "PORTER".) he d. 25 Jan 1690-1, aged 76 and his wid. died 7 Feb. 1700-1701, (indicating his wife was MARTHA PORTER.)  
Their 2nd child was MARTHA SHERMAN born 21 Feb 1640, m. 26 Sep 1661 FRANCIS BOWMAN, our ancestors in our GARFIELD-CHASE-LAMB family.

HOWEVER, page 865 of volume II has this about the wife of Capt. JOHN SHERMAN OF WATERTOWN:

"WILLIAM PALMER of Watertown, 1636 moved to Newbury, then to Hampton. He died leaving by his first wife (name not shown) 3 sons and a dau:

"EDWARD, CHRISTOPHER AND STEPHEN; and

"dr. MARTHA, wife of Capt. JOHN SHERMAN of Watertown."

WM. PALMER married (2nd) GRACE \_\_\_\_\_ ROGERS, the widow of Thomas Rogers (and Elizabeth, wife of Daniel Smith was a dr. by her 1st husband, Thomas Rogers) who d. Watertown 12 Nov 1638. "MARTHA (PALMER) wife of Capt. JOHN SHERMAN, must have been her (Grace's) step-daughter," not her daughter.

AND after his (WM. PALMER's) decease, his widow returned to Watertown and m. (3rd) ROGER PORTER.

But there is no indication that GRACE (\_\_\_\_\_) widow of THOMAS ROGERS and WM. PALMER when married to her 3rd husband ROGER PORTER had any children! So the 1st reference above about MARTHA being "dr. of ROGER AND GRACE PORTER" (CHECK OUT "PORTER" GEN'L.) must be in error; Vol. II gives MARTHA SHERMAN's parents as WILLIAM PALMER & his 1st wife, \_\_\_\_\_ PALMER. (NOTE ALSO: In the list of over three dozen PALMER emigrants who arrived here from England, HORACE WILBUR PALMER lists the first five as being:  
1st LT. WILLIAM PALMER - of Yarmouth, Mass. and Greenwich, Conn.  
2nd WALTER PALMER of Stonington  
3rd WILLIAM PALMER of Plymouth and Duxbury, Mass.  
4th WILLIAM PALMER OF HAMPTON, NEW HAMPSHIRE (apparently the one above referred to)  
5th WILLIAM PALMER of Wethersfield, Conn. and of Westchester, New York

Horace's manuscripts (which are in Los Angeles City Library) may have some information on this PALMER ancestor; this will be checked out to verify who was the wife of this WILLIAM PALMER OF HAMPTON, N.H. and the mother of his children.

NOTE ALSO: Page 865 of Volume II re WILLIAM PALMER contains the following:

"About 1650 WILLIAM PALMER OF HAMPTON agreed to release to his son-in-law, JOHN SHERMAN OF WATERTOWN, land in Great Ormsby, County of Norfolk, England. Probable he came from that place."

RE: MARRIAGES OF GRACE MAKIN, mother of CAPTAIN JOHN SHERMAN:

- 1st - married JOHN<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN (bap 1585) "before 14 May 1610"; he died 1616.
  - 2nd - married THOMAS ROGERS ca 1617; their dau bap 16 Nov 1617 Dedham, England. he died "Watertown 12 Nov 1638"; (they arrived N.E. ca 1636).
  - 3rd - married WILLIAM PALMER "of Watertown" who moved to Newbury, then to Hampton; he had had by his 1st wife (who remained in England) 1 dau, MARTHA, and 3 sons: Edward, Christopher and Stephen, who accompanied him to N.E.
  - 4th - married ("after William Palmer's decease she returned to Watertown") ROGER PORTER - her Will is signed GRACE PORTER.
- (See page 5A - "Pioneers of Massachusetts" by Pope re WILLIAM PALMER, yeoman.)  
GRACE MAKIN died 1662 at age 70; born, therefore, ca 1592. See page 62 Stratton's 3rd book: "The Inventory of the estate of GRACE SHERMAN, widow of JOHN and of THOMAS ROGERS and ROGER PORTER, made 8 July 1662, Watertown, mentions her son RICHARD living in England...." why did Stratton not include also WILLIAM PALMER herein as a prior husband of GRACE?



OUR DIRECT LINEAGES FROM EDMUND SHERMAN<sup>6</sup> (JR.) and JOAN MAKIN

- 3A. X EDMUND<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN (JR.) born Dedham, Essex County, England ca 1572; m. JOAN MAKIN (dau of TOBIAS MAKIN of Fingringhoe). Went to New England 1635 was at Wethersfield, Conn.; later to New Haven, Conn. 1641 died at New Haven. Their children:
- X i EDMUND SHERMAN<sup>7</sup> (3rd) bap Dedham 23 Oct 1599; went to N.E. Admitted freeman at Watertown, Mass. 1636; returned to Dedham, England; his Will dated 11 Apr 1673 was proved 28 May 1673, P.C.C. (Prerogative Court at Canterbury). Was a clothier, m.1) \_\_\_\_\_; m. 2) GRACE STEVENS 8 Dec 1656.
- ii ANN SHERMAN bap Dedham 15 Sept 1601
- iii JOAN SHERMAN bap Dedham 13 Dec 1603
- 4A. X iv HESTER SHERMAN<sup>7</sup> bap Dedham, England 1 Apr 1606, m. ANDREW WARD and thereafter they removed to Watertown, Mass.
- v RICHARD SHERMAN bap Dedham 16 Oct 1608, bur. 1647; m. MARY \_\_\_\_\_.
- vi BEZALEE SHERMAN bap Dedham 17 Sept 1611
- X vii REV. JOHN<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN born Dedham 26 Dec 1613, bap 4 Jan 1614. Great preacher and controversial figure of New England; had received his A.B. Trinity College, Cambridge; persecuted as a Puritan, fled with other SHERMANS and sailed from England in "Elizabeth"; Came to Watertown, Mass. and was "dismissed from the church there to Wethersfield, Conn. ... Went to Milford, Conn. 1647; returned to Watertown and became its third minister." Died 8 Aug 1685, age 72; buried East Watertown, Mass. He m. 1) MARY \_\_\_\_\_ and had 4 children: Mary who m. Henry Freeman; 2d m. Lewis Allen; Bezaleel b. 1640, B.A. at Harvard 1661; Daniel b 16 Mar 1642, sea captain and had 8 ch.; and Samuel<sup>8</sup> Sherman b 14 Apr 1644; Rev. John m. 2d MARY LAUNCE, dau of JOHN LAUNCE, descendants from EDWARD I. and had 10 children by 2nd wife--only ten according to Stratton; T.T. Sherman says all 14 children were by 2nd wife; (Stratton says 4 children were by 1st wife); 2nd child BEZALEEL b 1640 also died 1685; Rev. JOHN's Will mentions all 14 ch. except Joanna who died young (b 1652): four above named and James, Abiah, Abigail, Elizabeth, Mary, Grace, John, Hester and Mercy who married SAMUEL BARNARD and had 4 or 5 children. His daughter HESTER SHERMAN b ca 1662 died 1688 was obviously named for his older sister HESTER bap in Dedham, England 1 Apr 1606.
- X viii GRACE<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN ba. 1614/1615 Dedham, m. John Livermore "who was active in Bay Colony" when they came to N.E. "She died 14 Jan 1690, aged 75 years at Chelmsford, Mass. (Grave stone)."
- ix \_\_\_\_\_ a child bap at Dedham 18 June 1616 (Dedham Parish Records, p.65 "Transatlantic Shermans".)
- X x (Hon.) SAMUEL SHERMAN<sup>7</sup> b 12 July 1618 Dedham, England; came to America with his father and two older brothers, EDMUND<sup>7</sup> and Rev. JOHN<sup>7</sup> (two older married sisters HESTER WARD and GRACE LIVERMORE also came to America); (but EDMUND returned to England). He was Sherman ancestor of Gen. WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN<sup>13</sup>. 1632 at age 14 arrived 1st Watertown, Mass. with father; 1636 removed to Wethersfield, Conn. 1650's removed to Stamford, Conn. 1656 removed to Stratford, Conn. 1685 removed to Fairfield, Conn. 1700 Apr 5 died, Fairfield, Conn. age 82 He m. abt 1640 SARAH MITCHELL and had 9 children: Samuel<sup>8</sup>, Theophilus, Matthew, Edmund, John, Sarah (m. Josiah Rossiter), Nathaniel, Benjamin and David.
- xi \_\_\_\_\_, a daughter - "youngest daughter" mentioned in the Will of Samuel Sherman<sup>6</sup> (pg.111 T.T.Sherman Genealogy) who was her uncle, being a younger brother of EDMUND<sup>6</sup>. However Stratton lists only 10 children for EDMUND<sup>6</sup> and JOAN SHERMAN; the "child bap 18 June 1616" she may have considered this "youngest daughter".
- X - indicates those who emigrated to New England from this family; only the oldest son EDMUND<sup>7</sup> returned to Dedham, England; no indication that JOAN MAKIN SHERMAN, wife of EDMUND<sup>6</sup> accompanied the family to America. However, her sister, GRACE MAKIN ROGERS (widow of JOHN<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN) did emigrate to America with her 2nd husband, THOMAS ROGERS, and her two children: (Capt.) JOHN<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN and ELIZABETH ROGERS, then aged 24 and 19 years respectively.

OUR DIRECT LINEAGE IN THE SHERMAN FAMILY: (EDMUND<sup>6</sup>, EDMUND<sup>5</sup>, HENRY<sup>4</sup>,  
3 2 1)

- 4A. HESTER (Ester, Esther) SHERMAN, bap Dedham, England 1 Apr 1606; m. ca 1626 ANDREW WARD(E) (bap ca 1600 prob. Suffolk County, England); removed to N.E. 1630. See attached Memo-pedigree chart for this couple, taken from "Ward Genealogy" and "History of Old Fairfield, Conn." by Donald L. Jacobus (which in some instances differ). His Will is dated 3 June 1659, proved 20 Oct 1659. There is a monument to him recently (1920) erected in the old Fairfield burying ground on Beach Lane. HESTER's Will was proved 27 Dec 1665/1666. "From them is descended HARRIET BEECHER STOWE, author of 'Uncle Tom's Cabin', an emotionally charged book that was a great force in anti-slavery feeling." (Stratton book p.148, supra). Their 8th child was:
- 5A. ANDREW WARD (3rd) b. ca 1642 Connecticut; m. ca 1667/1668 TRYAL MEIGS born 1646 Guilford, Conn., dau of JOHN MEIGS and TAMAZIN FRY of Killingworth, Conn. (See previously prepared Resume of our MEIGS FAMILY). They had 10 children all born at Killingworth, Connecticut, including:
- 6A. i ANDREW WARD (4th) b. ca 1669 who m. DEBORAH JOY (b. 1673) and  
ii PETER WARD (Capt.) b 14 Oct 1767, m. MARY JOY 30 Mar 1699; (born 1680-) daughters of JACOB AND ELIZABETH (SPENCER) JOY. Peter died 18 Dec 1763, age 87. (See separate resume prepared on our JOY FAMILY.) This couple had 6 children including:
- 7A. MARY WARD b 10 Apr 1713 Killingworth, m. 18 Jan 1729 JOHN PALMER (1705-1788) (great-grandson of the emigrant WALTER PALMER of Stonington, Conn.) son of GERSHOM and SARAH (FENNER) PALMER of Killingworth; they removed to New York, settling in Pawling Precinct at Dover in Dutchess County in early 1750's with their 5 children who had been born in Killingworth:
- 8A. i CAPT. FENNER PALMER b 1735, R.W. Veteran; \*  
ii JOHN PALMER b 1737, m. Hope Thomas  
iii GERSHOM PALMER b 1740,  
iv ANN PALMER b 1742, m. Robert Townsend  
v MARY PALMER b 1743.
- CAPT. FENNER PALMER married ca 1754 LYDIA                     ?  
(Buell, Buck, Haines (Haynes) families) b 1736 Killingworth and first 6 children also born there: Sarah, John\*, Gershom, Anna, NATHANIEL and Peter Ward; 1760's removed to Hoosick, N.Y. in Albany (now Rensselaer) County where 4 more sons were born: Fenner, Joseph, Benjamin, and Jerusha, the last two died young; the wife LYDIA d 1778.
- 9A. NATHANIEL PALMER b 22 June 1764, R.W. veteran, m. 1781 SARAH                     ? (b 22 May 1764) and settled at Granville, Wash. Co. NY 1782 where 10 children were born including:
- 10A. NATHAN b 22 August 1782, married DOLLIE LAMB of Wells, Vt. 1803;  
JOHN C. b 21 Oct 1789, married NANCY LAMB ca 1810, sister of Dollie Lamb Palmer; daus of PHINEAS\* and ANNA (GARFIELD) LAMB formerly of Leicester, Mass. (descendants of the emigrant THOMAS LAMB of Roxbury, Mass.)

\* Capt. FENNER PALMER, his oldest son, Ensign JOHN PALMER and PHINEAS LAMB are all listed in the "D.A.R. PATRIOTS' INDEX" as soldiers of the Revolutionary War; his next two sons, GERSHOM and (our) NATHANIEL were also soldiers in that War.

## COMMENTS RE "TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS"

A splendid reference tool for knowing which SHERMANS emigrated to this country and to follow their lineages forwards and backwards. Photographs of these early, famous SHERMANS and pictures of houses and places in England from whence they came add to the enjoyment and pleasure of the book. The underlining of all names helps to immediately spot them on each page.

Her explanation herein (and in "New Light on Henry<sup>4</sup> Sherman") seems conclusive (though disappointing) that HENRY<sup>4</sup> OF DEDHAM was not the son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN OF YAXLEY, though doubtless closely related. We American SHERMANS are thus faced with the need to search still further back for the parents and grandparents of our HENRY SHERMAN OF DEDHAM. The huge pedigree charts in the back of the book are excellent to assist in locating and tracing one's descent from HENRY<sup>4</sup>. Also of interest is the "cousinship chart" included which quickly and easily reveals the exact line of descent from HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN, the Elder of Dedham, England of : Governor SHERMAN ADAMS, Presidential Assistant to President Eisenhower; Hon. ROGER SHERMAN, framer and signer of our Declaration of Independence and the Constitution; General WILLIAM TECUMSEH SHERMAN of Civil War fame; and many others.

# # # # #

### SUGGESTIONS:

It would have been helpful to have had reproduced the Will of HENRY<sup>4</sup> who was the son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> OF YAXLEY for comparison; the information about this HENRY was too brief considering he and our HENRY<sup>4</sup> are the two about which the mix-up has been made;

It would have been preferable if the paragraphs had been indented instead of using the block style; also if in all instances the list of children had been itemized and indented instead of listing them in sentences and grouping them in the paragraph;

On page 62: why did Mrs. Stratton not include WILLIAM PALMER as one of the husbands of GRACE MAKIN; she mentions GRACE SHERMAN was the widow of JOHN and of THOMAS ROGERS and ROGER PORTER; but what about WILLIAM PALMER, who was apparently her 3rd husband?

It was difficult to maintain the continuity of the parents and children when they were interspersed throughout the information about the allied lines, sometimes taking many pages. It would seem the placing of all allied lines, alphabetically, at the end of the book (instead of chronologically throughout the book) would have made for smoother reading.

It was unfortunate that the list of children for EDMUND<sup>6</sup> and JOAN (MAKIN) SHERMAN (beginning on page 147) omitted the dau. GRACE b 1614/1615 (m. John Livermore) on page 150 before the 8th and 9th children (born 1616 and 1618) and then included her at the bottom of page 164 as child "X. GRACE b. 1614 or 1615 Dedham, m. John Livermore". In following and comparing the Stratton pages with those in T.T. Sherman's "Sherman Genealogy" (1920) there was no explanation by Stratton why she had only 10 children and T.T. Sherman lists 11.

### QUERY:

# # # # #

Information was received by Mrs. Stratton to the effect that the Dedham Parish Records prior to 1560 contained no references to Shermans. (Page 69, 3rd book). (In 1964 she was advised by Rev. Canon M.M. Martin, Rural Dean of Colchester of Essex County "we can find no trace of the names SHERMAN or SHARMAN" prior to 1560.) However, the SHERMANS were in a nearby County of Norfolk and also Suffolk in the 1400's, i.e. "THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SHERMAN of Diss, Norfolk County, died 1493." If we are unable to find our HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN in the counties of Norfolk, Suffolk or Essex, is it possible they were not related to those families but were newcomers to England--from Germany? If our SHERMANS did not appear in Dedham, Essex County until about 1540 (shortly after parish registers were first maintained), could it be because they reached that area from Germany in the 1540's? HENRY<sup>4</sup> was married to AGNES "around 1542 and believed to have been born about 1511/1512! But there seems to be no record of him or his parents or siblings in any of these counties during the period 1510-1560?

An interesting hypothesis might be found in "THE WARD GENEALOGY" page 26 by the Association of Descendants of Andrew Ward by George K. Ward, A.M., Secretary, complete title "ANDREW WARDE AND HIS DESCENDANTS 1597-1910"--a family of Suffolk County, England. Therein is quoted the following entitled "PEDIGREE OF HESTER SHERMAN WARDE": (from Rev. David Sherman, A.M., Wilbraham, Mass., in N.E. Gen and Biog. Reg. Vol. 24, pp. 62-3):

COMMENTS RE "TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS" = continued  
from ANDREW WARDE AND HIS DESCENDANTS"

"PEDIGREE OF HESTER (SHERMAN) WARDE

" ' The Shermans are of German origin. In the fatherland, the name SHERMAN, SCHURMAN, SCHEARMANN, SCHERMAN, often occurs, and it was no doubt transferred many centuries ago to the vicinity of London by the Anglo-Saxon emigration..... From this metropolitan stock, a scion was transplanted to Dedham, Essex County. The name is derived from the original occupation of the family; they were cloth dressers, or shearers of the cloth. The family at Dedham retained the occupation and also the coat of arms, worn by those residing in or about London. In New England are found two distinct families bearing the name of SHERMAN. ... (One) is the Dedham stock, a branch of which emigrated to New England and settled in the vicinity of Boston. The first of the name of that line, of whom we have any knowledge, and perhaps the one who originally emigrated there, was HENRY SHERMAN, the ancestor of HESTER (SHERMAN) WARDE, and also of these distinguished men who occupied so exalted a place in the nation's history--ROGER SHERMAN, and the brothers Gen. WILLIAM T. and Senator SHERMAN.'"

Is it possible our HENRY<sup>4</sup> was the first to emigrate to England from Germany in the 1530's when he would have been in his twenties? Could that be an explanation of why at times our HESTER's name was written (as in Wills) ESTER (not Esther or Hester), perhaps more Germanic than the latter?

# # # # #

The late President WILLIAM HOWARD TAFT was also a descendant of our SHERMAN family; see page 6:

6  
EDMUND SHERMAN (JR.) m. JOAN MAKIN; had dau (younger sister to our HESTER):  
GRACE<sup>7</sup> SHERMAN ba 1614/1615, m. JOHN LIVERMORE; emigrated to N.E.; day:  
HANNAH LIVERMORE who m. JOHN COOLIDGE; had dau  
GRACE COOLIDGE who m. JONAS BOND; had son  
JOSIAH BOND who m. ELIZABETH FULLER; had dau  
ANNA BOND who m. SAMUEL TRASK; had dau  
SUSANNA TRASK who m. JONATHAN HOLMAN; had dau  
SUSAN HOLMAN who m. ASA WALTERS; had dau  
SUSAN WALTERS who m. SAMUEL DAVENPORT TORREY; had dau  
LOUISA (LOUISE) MARIA TORREY who m. ALPHONSO TAFT  
and had son born Cincinnati, Ohio 1857 they named:  
WILLIAM HOWARD TAFT who became the 27th  
President of the United States serving  
from March 4, 1909 to March 3, 1913.

("The American  
Genealogist" Vol. 22,  
pp. 205-210 (Apr. 1946)  
"The Book of Knowledge"

TAG article by Clarence Almon  
TORREY.)

"TAFT's conservativeness remained undiluted.  
his administration was fairly constructive.

Amendments were passed providing for the direct election of senators and the income tax, parcel post service and a Federal Children's Bureau were established; New Mexico and Arizona were added to the Union, and on April 10, 1910, TAFT became the first President to formally open the baseball season when he threw out the first ball..." A split in the Republican Party votes caused him to receive only the electoral votes from Utah and Vermont (Theodore Roosevelt running as a separate candidate in 1912) saw the election of Woodrow Wilson to succeed him. ("Presidents of Manifest Destiny" by Wallace Patterson and Sam Patrick, Los Angeles Times Syndicate). He graduated from Yale University in 1878 and practiced law. He was the first U.S. civil governor of the Philippines (1901-1904); he was Secretary of War (1904-1908) and provisional governor of Cuba in 1906. He was a Professor of Law at Yale from 1913-1921 and Chief Justice of the United States Supreme Court 1921 until his death in 1930. ("New University Encyclopedia")

Prepared by DORIS PALMER BUYS  
(Pedigree of WM. HOWARD TAFT prepared  
by FRANK PALMER SPESSARD)



ANDREW WARD(E) (JR.) married HESTER (Esther) SHERMAN ca 1626 in England

ba ca 1600, prob. Suffolk County, England )	ba 1 April 1606, the dau of EDMUND SHERMAN (JR.)
1630 - arrived N.E., res. Watertown, Mass. )	and JOAN MAKIN (dau of TOBIAS MAKIN)
1634 - 14 May - made a freeman )	bapt Dedham, England; Hester d.1665/1666 Fairfield, Conn.
member Congregational Church )	
1635-May - settled Wethersfield, Conn. )	
1641 - settled Stamford, Conn.	
1637 - Deputy at Wethersfield	
1639 - Magistrate at Stamford	
1644 - Deputy to New Haven Leg.	
1648-1658 Deputy from Fairfield to Conn.Leg.	
1659 - died at Fairfield & buried there.	

CHILDREN LISTED IN JACOBUS' "HISTORY OF OLD FAIRFIELD, CONN."

(EDMUND is not carried forward in WARD GEN'L. tho he is listed.)

BORN IN ENGLAND:

- |  |  |                                      |
|--|--|--------------------------------------|
| (He has a ?<br>opposite<br>HESTER; she<br>is not in<br>WARD<br>Genealogy)<br><br>ONLY 9<br>CHILDREN in<br>WARD GENEALOGY | 1. EDMUND WARD (named for her father) b. ca 1628 (no date shown in this reference book)  |                                      |
|  | 2. ANN WARD born ca 1629; m. ca 1649 Caleb Nichols   |                                      |
|  | 3. WILLIAM WARD born ca 1631; Surgeon; m. Deborah LOCKWOOD, dau of Sergt. ROBERT; 1 dau ESTHER (HESTER)  | (WARD GEN'L.                         |
|  | 4. HESTER (?) WARD b ca 1633, d. ca 1663/1664 (age 30), m. 1) JOSEPH Boosey; m. (2) <u>JEHU BURR, JR.</u> ca 1658  | (has <u>LT. JEHU</u>                 |
|  | 5. MARY WARD b ca 1635, died between 1665-1672; m. <u>BURR</u> (prob. JOHN).   | (BURR, husband                       |
|  | 6. JOHN WARD b ca 1637; m. 18 Apr 1664 at Middletown MARY HARRIS, dau of WILLIAM; he d. 1683/4 age ca 47; she m. (2d) Jan 1687 Josiah Gilbert of Wethersfield; she d. 1721. 6 children | of <u>MARY</u> )                     |
| (IF the<br>Immigrant was<br>called "SR.",<br>these two would<br>be "JR." & III<br>and <u>not</u><br>III & IV.            | i JOHN WARD b 1665, d. 1709  |                                      |
|  | ii ANDREW b 1667, d. 1728  |                                      |
|  | iii ESTHER WARD b 15 Dec 1669, Middletown; m. Wm. Cornwell;  | (WARD GENEALOGY has 7 Children       |
|  | iv MARY WARD b Aug 1672; married twice   | here: youngest was ABIGAIL, b. 1682) |
|  | v WILLIAM WARD b 30 June 1674; d. Middletown 6 Apr 1745; Sergt. m. 1702 Abigail Collins  |                                      |
|  | vi SAMUEL WARD bapt 12 Oct 1679; d. Middletown 25 June 1715; m. Elizabeth Adkins, dau of JOSIAH;   |                                      |
|  | 7. SARAH WARD b ca 1640, m. ca 1660. <u>NATHANIEL BURR</u> .   |                                      |
|  | 8. ANDREW WARD (III) b ca 1642, m. TRYAL MEIGS, dau of JOHN MEIGS; 10 children born at Killingworth, Conn.:  |                                      |
|  | i ANDREW (IV) b ca 1669; Capt. m. DEBORAH JOY, dau of JACOB. 1691.   | vii SAMUEL b 1680, d. 1681           |
|  | ii JOHN b 1671, died 1700  | viii HESTER b 1684, d 1684           |
| iii ABIGAIL b 1672, m. Samuel Norton, d 1733;  | ix MARY  |                                      |
| iv SARAH b 1674, m. Stephen Bradley, d 1763;   | x ANNA WARD b ca 1689; m. 1st)   |                                      |
| v PETER WARD, CAPT. b 14 Oct 1676; m. 30 Mar   | Samuel Rossiter 1709; m. 2nd)  |                                      |
| 1699 MARY JOY, dau of JACOB; d. 1763;  | Daniel Parmelee 1716; she  |                                      |
| vi WILLIAM b 1678, m. 1) Lettice Beach 1701;   | died 1 June 1746.  |                                      |
| m. 2) RUTH _____; he d. 1768   |  |                                      |
| 9. SAMUEL WARD b ca 1644   |  |                                      |
| 10. ABIGAIL WARD b ca 1647, m. 1) Moses Dimon; m. (2) Edward Howard in 1685.   |  |                                      |

(NOTE: WARD GENEALOGY gives these last 3 children in this order:  
7th ABIGAIL  
8th ANDREW, JR. b 1645/1647  
9th SAMUEL b 1647/1649  
AND LISTS ONLY 9 CHILDREN)

THERE SEEMS TO BE QUITE A DIFFERENCE BETWEEN JACOBUS' WARD FAMILY IN "HISTORY OF OLD FAIRFIELD" AND IN THE "WARD GENEALOGY".

ADDENDUM: RE: 5th WHO WAS THE FATHER OF OUR HENRY SHERMAN?

(1920) T.T.SHERMAN says this: "HE UNDOUBTEDLY WAS THE SON OF THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN OF YAXLEY.... (but) no absolute proof that these men were father and son has been found. THOMAS<sup>3</sup> died in 1551, leaving nine sons, of whom HENRY<sup>4</sup> was the fourth. .... Nothing in any records as yet found shows that this HENRY was not the son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> of YAXLEY, or that there was any other person named HENRY SHERMAN who<sup>4</sup> could have been the son of said THOMAS. ... Other circumstantial evidence that HENRY was the son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN OF YAXLEY will hereinafter appear. ...."

(1954) BERTHA STRATTON says this: "HENRY<sup>4</sup> was born then in 1511 or 1512"(not 1520 as previously supposed; her conclusion after examining his Deposition made 11 Oct 1574 giving his then age as 62 years; further establishing that he was not born in Dedham; but resided there after 1534). "Chief among these was the supposition that HENRY<sup>4</sup> could some day be identified as the son of THOS<sup>3</sup> of YAXLEY." (After having examined the Wills of his brother RICHARD, and of JOHN<sup>5</sup> SHERMAN and of the father of THOMAS<sup>3</sup>--JOHN<sup>2</sup>) she concludes:

"THOMAS<sup>3</sup> was at the most only 14 years old in 1512" and was a 5th son.

The Wills of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> (father of JOHN<sup>2</sup>) was also examined. Concluding that THOMAS<sup>3</sup> of YAXLEY could not have been born earlier than 1498, he could not have been the father of our HENRY<sup>4</sup> born about 1512 but rather "they were cousins of an unknown degree both descending from a common armigerous YAXLEY SHERMAN ancestor."

"THE SHERMAN GENEALOGY" SETS OUT THESE WILLS:

# # # #

T.T.SHERMAN's 1920 books sets out:

page 17

MARGARET, wife

1) WILL OF JOHN SHERMAN OF YAXLEY (wife Margaret) died 1466, mentioning: ROBERT, son

page 18

WILLIAM, grandson

2) WILL OF THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SHERMAN OF DISS, NOREOLK CO. & YAXLEY, SUFFOLK CO.

(in Latin, dtd.1492) (wife Agnes) died 1493

mentions wife AGNES AND:

JOHN, son

AGNES, dau who is m. to JOHN CLERK

THOMAS CLERK, my "godson" (grandson)

ELIZABETH CLERK (granddaughter)

"to each of the sons of the said JOHN CLERK" (son-in-law

"to each of the daughters of JOHN SHERMAN" )son)

RESIDUE TO JOHN SHERMAN AND JOHN CLERK

3) WILL OF JOHN CLERKE (son-in-law of THOMAS<sup>1</sup> SHERMAN) dtd 1506-7

Mentions: AGNES (SHERMAN) my wife and "each of my children"

THOMAS CLERKE, son

4) WILL OF JOHN<sup>2</sup> SHERMAN OF YAXLEY, COUNTY OF SUFFOLK. wife Agnes Fuller, dau of Thomas.

died 1504

(page 20-21)

)m.2nd Robert Hendry)

MENTIONS: Wife, Agnes<sup>3</sup>

EXECUTORS: wife and Thomas Fuller

son, THOMAS<sup>3</sup> (to receive at age of 22)

dau, MARGERY (married Robert Lockwood)

"each of my godchildren"

(NOTE: T.T.SHERMAN has this sentence: "JOHN<sup>2</sup> SHERMAN HAD ONE OR MORE OTHER DAUGHTERS, ACCORDING TO HIS FATHER's WILL (above)".)

Under #2 above THOMAS had bequests "to each of the daughters of JOHN SHERMAN" but they were not named in THOMAS' Will nor are they listed in JOHN's Will, except dau MARGERY.)

(CONTINUING WITH WILLS REPRODUCED IN T.T.SHERMAN's GENEALOGY)

- 5) WILL OF WILLIAM FULLER OF BURY ST. EDMUNDS dtd 1497/8, proved 16 Mar 1498/9  
 (pos a brother to the AGNES FULLER who m. JOHN<sup>2</sup> SHERMAN?) wife Margery  
 mentions: Bequests made to five others, including:  
 " Robert Fuller my neve (nephew)" FRANCIS SHERMAN  
 WILLIAM SHERMAN my godson JAMES SHERMAN  
 dau Marie, wf of John Ward ANTHONY SHERMAN  
 dau Ann wf of Anthony Barker  
 " THOMAS SHERMAN, the younger" WITNESS: THOMAS SHERMAN  
 "my nevie THOMAS SHERMAN"
- 6) WILL OF THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN(John<sup>2</sup>, Thomas<sup>1</sup>) OF YAXLEY, prob.b.ca 1490, m. JANE WALLER ca 1512;  
 died 1551; "dioces of Norwiche" (pages 23-26)  
 MENTIONS: EXECUTORS: THOMAS SHERMAN, sonne and  
 wife JANE ROBERT KENE of Thrandeston, gentilman  
 sister LOCKWOOD (Margery Sherman who m. Robert Lockwood) STRATTON BOOK IS IDENTICAL  
 son THOMAS<sup>4</sup> IN SETTING OUT THE WILL OF THOMAS<sup>3</sup>:  
 "eich of his brethern" (Thomas to pay to)  
 son RICHARD  
 son JOHN (40 pounds to each of the following)  
son HENRY "to be paide to hym WHEN HE COMYTH OUTE OF HIS PRENTYSHODE"  
 son WILLM "to be paid lyke as to HENRY"  
 son ANTHONY "when he comythe to the age of xxij yeres"  
 son ffraunces (FRANCIS)  
 BARTHILMEW and JAMES "for fynding to Scole")  
 son BARTHILMEWE  
 son JAMES  
 "to eche of my Systers Children" (Margery Sherman Lockwood)
- 7) WILL OF JANE (nee WALLER) SHERMAN GARDINER (pos. Mrs. John Gardiner), died 1573  
 ("to be buried by my late husbnde THOMAS SHERMAN" ) (pages 26-28)  
 MENTIONS:  
 Also(Anthonie)i ANTHONYE SHERMAN, my sonne WILLM SHERMAN ) "sones and daughters  
 ii HENRY SHERMAN my sone ROBERT " ) off Anthonye Sherman  
 iii JAMES SHERMAN my sonne BEATTRICE " )  
 iv THOMAS SHERMAN my eldest sonne MARGARET " )  
 v RICHARD SHERMAN MARIE " )  
 ELIZABETH, wief of THOMAS SHERMAN  
 SYBILL wief of FRAUNCES, my sonne BRIGETT SHERMAN ) daus of James  
 MARIE SHERMAN, wief vnto Anthonye MARIE SHERMAN ) Sherman  
 MARGERIE, wieffe of James  
 ELIZABETH wief of John  
 vi BARTHOLOMEW my sone  
 THOMAS SHERMAN, sone of Thomas Sherman, my eldest sone  
 ELIZABETH, dau of the saied Thomas Shermon
- EXECUTORS: THOMAS AND ANTHONIE SHERMAN; ALTERNATE EXECUTOR: FRAUNCES SHERMAN my sone  
 with ANTHONIE
- NOTE: 3 sons ARE NOT GIVEN A BEQUEST: JOHN, WILLIAM and FRANCIS although the latter is  
mentioned as alternate executor. T.T.Sherman explains "WILLIAM was then rich and  
 lived in London and Ipswich." JOHN's name is mentioned only as husband of  
 ELIZABETH to whom a bequest is made.

- 8) WILL OF JOHN WALLER OF WORTHAM, COUNTY OF SUFFOLK, whose dau JANE m. THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN.  
(son of Thomas Waller of Parham and Margaret Hotofte) wife: MARGARET THOROLDE  
dau of John Thorolde of Thornham, Suffolk.) 2nd wife: MARGERY \_\_\_\_\_

Will proved 26 June 1539

(dau JANE m. THOMAS SHERMAN  
whose 1st son was

son, GEORGE WALLER, m. MARY YAXLEY, dau of Anthony)  
Yaxley

THOMAS<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN who married for his first wife, ELIZABETH YAXLEY, sister to MARY)

WILL MENTIONS: MARGERY my wife

\_\_\_\_\_ WALLER, my son and his heirs

ANNE my daughter

"all my wife's children" (apparently referring to 2nd wife's children by her  
first marriage ?)

RELICT (widow) MARGERY to administer.

Page 35

- 9) WILL OF THOMAS WACE (WASE) 22 June 1533, proved 5 Mar 1538, had as Executors:  
THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN OF YAXLEY and Robert Kene.

BEQUEST GIVEN TO TESTATOR'S

GODSON, HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN, SON OF THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN (REGISTER Vol. 67, p.154).

(NOTE: 1540 THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN WAS DEPUTY SHERIFF OF SUFFOLK COUNTY.) ALSO IN 1546.  
(THOMAS WAS ALSO ATTORNEY OF THE COMMON LAW; TWO OF HIS SONS, THOMAS<sup>4</sup> AND FRANCIS  
FOLLOWED THEIR FATHER'S PROFESSION OF THE LAW.)

10)

Pages 52-7

WILL OF HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN "the elder of Colchester, formerly of DEDHAM," b. ca 1520,  
1st wife AGNES BUTTER; 2nd) m. MARION WILLSON; m. 3rd) MARGERY \_\_\_\_\_, the widow.  
(PARENTS: unknown)

MENTIONED IN HIS WILL: (dated 20 Jan 1589/90 - proved 25 July 1590)

wife: MARGERY

SON: HENRY<sup>5</sup> (Henrye Shearman) my sonne

GRANDCH. - Children of HENRY<sup>5</sup>: HENRY<sup>6</sup>, SAMUEL, DANIELL, JOHN, EZECHIELL; PHEBE,  
NATHANIELL and ANNE

SON: EDMUNDE<sup>5</sup> (EDMONDE SHEARMAN)

GRANDCH. - Children of EDMONDE: EDMONDE<sup>6</sup>, RICHARDE, BEZALIELL, ANNE AND SARA

SON-IN-LAW: WILLIAM PETFEILDE & HIS 3 CHILDREN: RICHARDE, SUSAN AND ELIZABETH

SON: ROBERT<sup>5</sup>

DAU: JUDITH<sup>5</sup> PETFEILDE

GRANDCH. - Children of ROBERT: JANE AND ANNE

SON-IN-LAW: NICHOLAS FFYNCE

EXECUTORS: HENRY & EDMONDE, sonnes

11)

UNFORTUNATELY THE STRATTON BOOK (1969) DOES NOT GIVE US THE WILL OF THE HENRY<sup>4</sup> who  
was the son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> which would have been helpful, for comparison purposes.  
HER BOOK DOES SET OUT INFORMATION FROM THE WILLS OF THAT HENRY'S RELATIVES: 1) BROTHER  
RICHARD AND 2) BROTHER, JOHN'S OLDEST CHILD: ROBERT<sup>5</sup> WHO DIED 1576 (before his father who  
RICHARD's Will, he died 1587) "my well loved \_\_\_\_\_ also died in 1587)  
mentions nephew THOMAS<sup>5</sup> & his son uncle ANTHONY SHERMAN" ... "to my uncle  
RICHARD<sup>6</sup> and another HENRIE SHERMAN" ... "uncle BARTHOLOMEW Sherman"  
nephew also named THOMAS "OF DISS, and his Uncle Henry Sherman to be supervisor  
my brother, HENRY's SONNE." and overseer & his father JOHN<sup>4</sup> is Executor.

CONTINUING WITH EXCERPTS FROM PERTINENT SHERMAN WILLS:  
(CONTINUING WITH WILLS REPRODUCED OR EXCERPTED IN STRATTON BOOK)

(WILLS IN WHICH HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN, son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> is mentioned):

and 3) BROTHER WILLIAM SHERMAN OF LONDON AND IPSWICH whose Will also mentions "his brother HENRY."

- 11) The STRATTON book (page 48): "HENRY<sup>4</sup>, 4th son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> and JANE (WALLER) ..." refers to the Will of the father and does not give us the Will of HENRY<sup>4</sup> nor his wife's name or names of his children, if he had any. It is very difficult to follow the organizational set-up of these pages about the children of THOMAS<sup>3</sup>, their wives, children and contents of their Wills.

QUERY: Why was not more information on this HENRY<sup>4</sup> set out?

Page 47: WILL OF RICHARD<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN, of London and Diss, Norfolk County and Yaxley (son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> & brother of HENRY<sup>4</sup>): in Suffolk County

".... to my nephew THOMAS SHERMAN of Diss, my brother HENRY's sonne"

MRS. STRATTON calls attention to the HENRY<sup>4</sup> OF DEDHAM who had only 3 sons (#10 supra) HENRY<sup>5</sup> - EDMUND - and ROBERT mentioned in his Will dated 1589, proved 1590:

(see page 9 "New Light on Henry Sherman") "Another difficulty was that HENRY<sup>4</sup> (Thos.<sup>3</sup>) was mentioned in 1587 in brother RICHARD's Will as having a son THOS.<sup>5</sup> of Disse, whereas HENRY OF DEDHAM mentions no son THOS. in his Will of Jan. 20, 1589/90...."

HOWEVER:

Compare the foregoing to T.T. SHERMAN's GENEALOGY pages 60-61:

(listing one THOMAS of Diss, living in 1586 as a son of HENRY OF DEDHAM:)

"THOMAS<sup>5</sup> SHERMAN of Diss, living in 1586 (is the 6th child of HENRY OF DEDHAM). RICHARD<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN, son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup> SHERMAN (and therefore a brother to HENRY<sup>4</sup>) in his Will dated Jan. 21, 1586/7 MENTIONS HIS NEPHEW THOMAS<sup>5</sup> SHERMAN, of Diss, his brother HENRY SHERMAN's son. (Reg. 54, p.160). This THOMAS<sup>5</sup> may have died before Jan. 20, 1590 the date of his father's Will, without issue, or he may have been the THOMAS SHERMAN whose wife ELIZABETH was buried at Diss, Jan. 14, 1617, and who was the father of:

1. ELIZABETH SHERMAN bap. Diss, Nov 9, 1606 (m. Christopher Anger at Diss, Jan 14, 1640)
2. ROBERT SHERMAN bap. Diss, May 9, 1609;
3. MARY SHERMAN bap. Diss, Jan 6, 1614

"This THOMAS SHERMAN possibly m. (2) ANN \_\_\_\_\_ who was buried at Diss Jan 11 1637 )Reg. 59, p. 398)."

The fact that HENRY OF DEDHAM failed to mention a son THOMAS in his Will of 1589/90 would not of itself (it appears to the writer) indicate that he did not have a son named THOMAS nor would it necessarily indicate that a son named THOMAS had pre-deceased him, though this would be the presumption.



- 12) WILL OF EDMUND<sup>5</sup> SHERMAN, son of HENRY OF DEDHAM: (dated 1 Aug 1599, proved 30 Apr 1601)  
 Widow: ANNE TO BE EXECUTRIX (nee CLERE) (Codicil 20 Dec 1600)

MENTIONS: son, EDMUND<sup>6</sup>  
 son, RICHARD eldest dau ANNE\*  
 son BEZALIELL dau SARAH  
 son SAMUEL dau HANNA  
 son JOHN dau SUSAN  
 son BENJAMIN youngest dau MARY  
 sister - JUDITH PETTFIELD  
 brother - HENRY SHERMAN

kinsman = SYMON FENNE (brother-in-law?)

"to ANNE, BEZALIELL AND SARAH each forty shillings which their grandfather (HENRY) SHERMAN gave them to be paid them at the ages mentioned in his Will"--  
 referring to HENRY<sup>4</sup> OF DEDHAM (see #10, page 3 supra) whose Will was proved 1590.

"residue of personal estate 'to be equally divided among MY SEVEN CHILDREN, VIZT.:

(1) SAMUEL	(4) SARA (SHERMAN) WARNER
(2) JOHN	(5) ANNA SHERMAN
(3) BENJAMIN	(6) SUSAN SHERMAN
	(7) MARY SHERMAN

My six children yet under age." (these would be: i. HANNA (who m. Richard Backler)  
 ii. SUSAN ba 1591  
 iii. SAMUEL  
 iv. JOHN  
 v. BENJAMIN ba 1597  
 vi. MARY ba 1599 (m. Andrew Bacon)

- 13) WILL OF ANNA<sup>6</sup> (or Ann) SHERMAN (bap. Dedham 1581, m. 1601 JOHN ANGER, son of Wm.)  
 \* (oldest dau of above EDMUND<sup>5</sup>) died 1625; Will dated 2 Sept 1625 proved 16 Dec 1625 at Colchester; she was age 44)

MENTIONS:

sons JOHN, BEZALIELL, SAMUEL and EDMUND (words in parenthesis added by the compiler)  
 daus MARY (SPARHAWKE) and ANN ANGER  
 brothers RICHARD SHERMAN (ba 1577 who goes to N.E. thereafter)  
 RICHARD BACKLER -(husband of her sister HANNA (ANNA))  
 SAMUEL SHERMAN (clothier of Dedham)  
 EDMUND SHERMAN<sup>6</sup> (ba 1572 who removes to N.E. thereafter)  
 JOHN SHERMAN (clothier of Dedham)  
 sisters SARAH SHERMAN WARNER (m. Thomas Warner)  
 ANNA BACKLER (m. above Richard Backler)  
 MARY BACON (m. Andrew Bacon; went to N.E. thereafter)  
 brother BENJAMIN SHERMAN (ba 1597)  
 and

"WILLIAM ANGER, JUDITH SHERMAN AND ANNA SMITH, MY HUSBAND'S BROTHER AND SISTERS;"

(NOTE: this JUDITH and ANNA were sisters of testator's husband, JOHN ANGER'.)  
 (This JUDITH ANGER (not ANGIER) married EDMUND<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN, (10th child of HENRY<sup>5</sup>)  
 (who was a first cousin of the testator ANNA SHERMAN ANGER, named after her)  
 (father EDMUND<sup>5</sup> & bore the same name as her oldest brother also EDMUND<sup>6</sup>.)

nieces ANN and JONE SHERMAN daughters of my brother EDMUND  
 ANN SHERMAN daughter of my uncle SHERMAN, doctor, departed; (her father's youngest brother was ROBERT SHERMAN, M.D.)

WILLIAM PETFIELD, son of Richard

ANNA SHERMAN daughter of my brother RICHARD (Richard went to NE later)

"I GIVE TO THE TWO CHILDREN OF THE WIFE OF THOMAS ROGERS, JOHN SHERMAN AND RICHARD SHERMAN, MY KINSMEN, TEN SHILLINGS APIECE AT THEIR AGES OF ONE AND TWENTY."

13) WILL OF ANN SHERMAN ANGER (continued)

"THE WIFE OF THOMAS ROGERS" in Anna's Will (last paragraph preceding page) refers to the widow of her cousin, the JOHN SHERMAN . who married GRACE MAKIN and he died at about age 30 having only two sons: (Capt.) JOHN and RICHARD SHERMAN. (ANNA and JOHN's fathers: HENRY<sup>5</sup> and EDMUND<sup>5</sup> were first cousins, the sons of HENRY<sup>4</sup> of Dedham). JOHN SHERMAN's widow, GRACE MAKIN married 2nd THOMAS ROGERS and had one dau ELIZABETH; the three of them and her oldest son by her first marriage (CAPT. JOHN) came to New England together. GRACE subsequently married WILLIAM PALMER (whose dau MARTHA married her oldest child, Capt. JOHN); and after Palmer's death she married 4th) ROGER PORTER -- 4 marriages in all. So CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN and his wife, MARTHA PALMER were step-brother and sister though they may not have been that at the time of their marriage. GRACE (SHERMAN) ROGERS may have married WILLIAM PALMER after the marriage of her son, John to Martha Palmer. It is interesting to note that THOMAS MAKIN (father of GRACE) was a witness to the Will of ANNA SHERMAN ANGER. (See also pages 84-85 T.T.Sherman Genealogy for ANNA SHERMAN ANGER's Will.)

# # # # #

Pages 145-146 STRATTON's 3rd book contains portions of the Will of EDMUND<sup>5</sup> and also portions of the Will of his widow ANNE (CLERE) SHERMAN.

# # # # #

PAGES 82-83 of T.T.SHERMAN GENEALOGY has Will of EDMUND SHERMAN<sup>5</sup>.

PAGE 105 T.T.SHERMAN GENEALOGY referring to EDMUND<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN who had come to N.E. has this:

"EDMUND<sup>6</sup> was at Wethersfield, Conn., 1635, later went to New Haven, Conn., where he died in 1641. '3 Mon 1641 Inventory and Will of Olde Father Shirman was delivered into Court.' (New Haven Colony Records, Vol. 1, p.52.) Will and inventory cannot be found. (Register vol. 51, p.309)."

REFERENCES CHECKED OUT RE "THE SHERMANS" OR TO BE CHECKED OUT  
COMMENTS

- (1) N.E. H&G (1853) Vol. 7  
(Capt. John<sup>1</sup>, Joseph<sup>2</sup>, Wm.<sup>3</sup>)  
Hon. Roger was Judge of Common Pleas; m. 1763 2d Rebecca Prescott & had 8 ch, 7 of whom survived him.  
Re: Hon. ROGER SHERMAN, Senator of USA who d. 23 July 1793, signer of Declaration of Independence; b. Newton, Mass. 19 Apr 1721, son of WILLIAM and great-grandson of CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN. Res. New Milford, Ct. June 1743; m. Elizabeth Hartwell - 7 ch; 2 d.y. at New Milford & 2 d.y. at N. Haven; wf. d. Oct. 1760.
- (2) AMERICAN BIOGRAPHY Vol. XL (1930) by The Amer. Historical Society  
Edmund was at Watertown, Mass. and at New Haven, Conn. m. prob. JOANE MAKIN.  
SAMUEL, SR. & sons: Samuel, Jr. Theophilus, Matthew & Edmund were members 1st Ch. Woodbury, Ct.  
Re EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. s of EDMUND & ANNE PELLATTE b Dedham, Essex Co. & d. New Haven 1641; came to Amer. 1635-1636 with sons; and 2 daus: EDMUND - who returned to England later Rev. JOHN of Watertown, Mass. SAMUEL - of Stratford, Conn. d. Fairfield 1700 HESTER - m. Andrew Ward of Wethersfield, Conn. GRACE ba 1616, m. John Livermore  
A descendant of SAMUEL, JR., SARAH, b 1653, m. HON. JOSIAH ROSSITER, whose 10th child SARAH ROSSITER m. STEPHEN BUTLER. (b. 1744)
- OTHER REFERENCES LISTED INCLUDE:  
"SHERMAN GENEALOGY" (Ms.) Vol. VII, Nos. 2458, 2461, 2462;  
"ANCIENT WOODBURY" and Vol. VII, Nos. 2461, 2470, 2471.  
"LITCHFIELD, CONN. GEN'L. REGISTER" p. 185  
N.E. G & BIO. REG. Vol. LV pp 149-153.
- (3) "SHERMAN GENEALOGY" including "Families of ESSEX, SUFFOLK and NORFOLK, ENGLAND" (1920) by Thomas Townsend SHERMAN.  
Re: SHERMANS of YAXLEY, SUFFOLK CO. and OF DEDHAM, ESSEX COUNTY  
PERTAINS TO:  
1) SOME DESCENDANTS OF THE IMMIGRANTS:  
CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN  
REV. JOHN SHERMAN  
EDMUND SHERMAN and SAMUEL SHERMAN  
2) HON. ROGER SHERMAN  
3) HON. CHARLES R. SHERMAN  
Earliest record is RICHARD 1e SHERMAN 8 June 1274 (see attached memos for resume')
- (4) "THE NEW ENGLAND SHERMANS" by Roy V. SHERMAN, Professor Emeritus, University of Akron, Ohio (1974)  
(NOTE: Cousin Gwen Bell owns a copy; she lives in Litchfield, Michigan)  
TABLE OF CONTENTS INCLUDES THE FOLLOWING:
- | DESCENDANTS OF:  | PAGES   |
|--|---------|
| 1) WILLIAM SHERMAN, CORDWAINER                                 | 1-16    |
| 2) WILLIAM SHERMAN, THE PILGRIM                                | 17-39   |
| 3) REV. BROWN SHERMAN, the COLLEGE PURITAN                     | 40-83   |
| 4) CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN, Watertown, Mass.                        | 83-168  |
| 5) HON. SAMUEL SHERMAN, SON OF EDMUND AND JOAN (MAKIN) SHERMAN | 169-288 |
- (5) "GENEALOGIES OF DESCENDANTS OF EARLY SETTLERS OF WATERTOWN, MASS." VOL. I AND VOL. II (1855) (by Henry Bond, M.D.)  
INCLUDES INFO RE ANOTHER SHERMAN ANCESTOR OF OURS:  
\*CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN b. Dedham, Eng. came to America 1634; m. MARTHA, dau of Roger & Grace PORTER. Their 2nd child was MARTHA SHERMAN born 21 Feb 1640-1641 who married 26 Sept. 1661 FRANCIS BOWMAN (b. 1630 prob. at Watertown, Mass. and d. 16 Dec 1687, age 57 at Cambridge Farms, leaving several minor children). During their 26 years of marriage they had 10 children including their 4th NATHANIEL b 9 Feb 1669 who m. Anna BARNARD 16 Dec 1692 and had seven daughters, the oldest being MARY BOWMAN b 22 Dec 1693 who m. SAMUEL GARFIELD ca 1714 prob. at Watertown, Mass. They had nine children and the 8th was our ELIAKIM GARFIELD b 3 Oct 1732 who married 3 July 1759 (1st) HANNAH CHASE of Newbury & Sutton, Mass. and had five children born prob. Leicester, Mass. Their 2nd child was our ANNA GARFIELD ba 3 Jan 1762 who m. PHINEAS LAMB ca 1780 and had the two daus DOLLIE AND NANCY who m. the two PALMER brothers, NATHAN and JOHN C. (see p. 430)  
"... early settlers in NE were EDMUND, Capt. JOHN & Rev. JOHN.... \*Capt. JOHN was a cousin; the other two were brothers... SAMUEL SHERMAN of Boston 1637 was brother to Rev. JOHN." (This corresponds to the 3 brothers listed in #2 above.)
- (5A) "PIONEERS OF MASSACHUSETTS" by Charles Henry Pope  
Pastor of 1st Church, Charlestown, Mass. (where our WALTER PALMER was a co-founder of the town in 1628) p. 342  
Mentions WILLIAM PALMER yeoman, "to begin a plantation at HAMPTON" whose dau MARTHA m. JOHN SHERMAN of Watertown; prob. from Great Ormesby, Norfolk Co. England "divorced by Gen. Court 19 Oct 1650 from his wife ELINOR who had married another man in England."

REFERENCES CHECKED OUT RE "THE SHERMANS" (continued)  
OR TO BE CHECKED OUT

CITATIONS	COMMENTS
(6) <u>"THE HISTORY OF ANCIENT WETHERSFIELD, CONN." VOL. II (1904) by HENRY R. STILES</u>  Recommends ORCUTT's "HIST. STRATFORD, CT."  See: pp. 139, 296, Vol. I	RE: EDWARD SHERMAN (sometimes less correctly "Edmund"), Watertown 1635, 'one of the 6 members of the W. church 'to form a new ch. govt.' in Conn." 1) he was gd.s. of HENRY of Dedham, Eng. 2) he was 3rd s. of HENRY 2d, clothier of Dedham who m. SUSAN HILLS and d. 1610; 3) he was b. in Eng. and m. 1611 JUDITH ANGLIER, prob. a 2nd wife. 8 ch. He bro't with him 2 sons, SAMUEL and Rev. JOHN. d. New Haven 1641
(7) <u>"SLADE-BABCOCK GENEALOGY" by Carl Boyer, 3rd (of Newhall, Calif. 1970, 'published by the Author' (not printed; prob. off-set print)</u>  Pg. 74 sets out 6 children by 1st wife AGNES (BUTTER?): ALICE b ca 1542 JUDITH m. Wm. Petfield HENRY b ca 1546 EDMUND who m. 1) ANNE PELLATTE and m. 2) ANNE CLERE JOHN who was bur 1576; no issue ROBERT ba 1560, a Physician.	SHERMAN is an allied line in this book. He mentions in 1st paragraph T. SHERMAN, author of "SHERMAN GENEALOGY" 1920 and MRS. STRATTON's works. RE: "HENRY <sup>4</sup> SHERMAN, the Elder, b ca 1511/1512.... His parentage is not known. He was not the son of THOMAS <sup>3</sup> (ca 1490-1551) of Yaxley, Suffolk Co. SHERMANS; but (according to Capt. A. N. WOOD) this HENRY was son of a THOMAS SHERMAN who was buried in Dedham 16 Mar 1564, a different THOMAS. ('from typed copy of notes of Dr. Dorothy Wood Ewers')"
(8) <u>"HISTORY &amp; GENEALOGY OF THE FAMILIES OF OLD FAIRFIELD, CONN." by Donald Lines JACOBUS</u>  (Children not coming to N.E.: Ann bapt 15 Sept 1601 Joan bapt 13 Dec 1603 Richard bapt 16 Oct 1608, bur. Eng. 1647 Bezaleel bapt 17 Sept 1611 _____ a dau	RE: EDMUND SHERMAN b Dedham, Eng. ca 1572, d. New Haven 1641; 'may have m. JOAN MAKIN,* dau of Tobias MAKIN of Fingringhoe, but the evidence seen does not seem conclusive! Came to N.E. with some of his children' who were: EDMUND ba 1599, came to Watertown HESTER ba 1606 m. ANDREW WARD JOHN b 1613 of Watertown & Wethersfield, B.A. Trinity Coll. Cambridge; a minister. GRACE ba 18 June 1616 who m. John Livermore SAMUEL SHERMAN ba 12 July 1618, m. Sarah Mitchell and had 8 sons; dau SARAH m. Josiah Rossiter.
(9) <u>"HISTORY OF THE TOWN OF LEXINGTON, MIDDLESEX CO., MASS." (1913) by Chas. Hudson Vol. II on "GENEALOGIES" 1st Settlers p. 44</u>	RE: CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN, and (wife) MARY (PALMER) of Watertown. Their dau, MARTHA born 21 Feb 1641 (d. 25 Feb. 1728-1729) married 26 Sept. 1661 FRANCIS BOWMAN, resident of Cambridge Farms, where he d. 16 Dec. 1687 (b. prob. 1631); 10 ch. (Nathaniel, son, m. ANNA BARNARD whose dau, MARY m. SAMUEL GARFIELD.)
(10) <u>"SHERMAN AND ALLIED FAMILIES" by Bertha L. Stratton (1951)</u> (Refers to: "AMERICAN SHERMANS")	RE: CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN & mother, GRACE (MAKIN)* (a widow, she m. THOS. ROGERS)... "GRACE ROGERS and her husband, THOS. ROGERS, and her children, JOHN SHERMAN & Elizabeth Rogers emigrated to Watertown, Mass. ca 1636 (page 36). (See Memo.)
(11) <u>"NEW LIGHT ON HENRY SHERMAN OF DEDHAM, ENGLAND" (1954) by Bertha L. Stratton</u>	1) birthdate of HENRY <sup>4</sup> 1511-1512 (not 1520); 2) Stratton feels she found proof that HENRY could not be the son HENRY of THOMAS <sup>3</sup> of YAXLEY. IF NOT, WHO WERE HIS PARENTS?
(12) <u>"TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS" by Bertha L. Stratton (1969)</u>	Excellent summary of all the SHERMANS who arrived in this country and their famous descendants; repeats explanation that our HENRY <sup>4</sup> could not be son HENRY <sup>4</sup> of THOMAS <sup>3</sup> of YAXLEY.
(13) <u>"SHERMAN GENEALOGY" by Charles Pomeroy Sherman</u>	(Page 103 of Item #10 above: Mrs. Stratton refers to this book quoting:) "EDMUND <sup>6</sup> SHERMAN, with sons SAMUEL, EDMUND <sup>7</sup> and REV. JOHN and cousin, JOHN <sup>7</sup> SHEARMAN (later the Captain JOHN) fled the persecution which was the lot of Puritans of that time. they sailed in the 'Elizabeth'."

\* Pg. 36 ITEM #10 above: GRACE MAKIN, sister of JOAN MAKIN, wife of EDMUND<sup>6</sup> SHERMAN, dau of TOBIAS MAKIN of Fingringhoe, Essex County, England. She apparently is more convinced than was Donald L. Jacobus of the relationship of these two SHERMAN wives; JACOBUS asserted "evidence seen does not seem conclusive" that JOAN MAKIN was the wife of EDMUND<sup>6</sup> (JR.).



MEMBER  
ORANGE COUNTY CALIFORNIA  
GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

February 2, 1983

RE: THE SHERMAN FAMILY IN AMERICA

The OCCGS Library has a copy of "THE SHERMAN GENEALOGY" (published in 1920) by THOMAS TOWNSEND SHERMAN which until recent years with additional research was the authority for ancestors and descendants of this family. (See also: "ADDITIONAL FACTS ABOUT THE ENGLISH SHERMANS" April 1913 issue of THE REGISTER, volume 67, pp.155-157).

In 1951 BERTHA L. STRATTON published her first of three books on the SHERMAN family, i.e.:

"SHERMAN AND ALLIED FAMILIES"

In 1954 she published "NEW LIGHT ON HENRY SHERMAN OF DEDHAM, ENGLAND" and in 1969 she published "THE TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS".

The undersigned had compiled her Sherman family's descent using the early genealogy (1920) by T. T. Sherman only to learn from a cousin who happened upon the Stratton books that we would have to eliminate the first three generations of our Sherman family as the Stratton books seem to prove the "SHERMANS OF YAXLEY" were not a direct line of our "SHERMANS OF DEDHAM" (though they may have been related). In other words T. T. SHERMAN's listing of the following three YAXLEY SHERMANS: THOMAS<sup>1</sup>, JOHN<sup>2</sup> and THOMAS<sup>3</sup> as direct ancestors of our HENRY<sup>4</sup> was incorrect! Thus we would have to commence with that HENRY being #1 of our lineage which thus far is the earliest known ancestor.

The undersigned has a copy of "THE TRANSATLANTIC SHERMANS" from which it appears clear that the STRATTON research is accurate and consequently a resume of this family was re-written to incorporate the changes and at the same time to explain the discrepancy. A copy of her resume is attached for the OCCGS Pamphlet-Surname File for whatever aid it may be to anyone else interested in the SHERMANS.

It is suggested that a brief notation be inserted in the front of the copy of "THE SHERMAN GENEALOGY" (by T. T. SHERMAN 1920) in the library of OCCGS calling attention to the reader to also check out the STRATTON books; the first two are out of print but the 1969 volume is still available from the writer with whom the undersigned has recently corresponded. She may be addressed:

MRS. WILLIAM J. STRATTON, 79 SOMMERS LANE, STATEN ISLAND, NEW YORK 10314.

The price of the book is somewhere around \$15. to \$20. (My copy was given to me by my cousin.) In a letter from Mrs. Stratton (October 9, 1982) she wrote: "If you are going to re-number HENRY<sup>4</sup> SHERMAN as HENRY<sup>1</sup> SHERMAN, you will have a great deal of trouble with existing work..... My book went to Sir ANTHONY WAGNER (then Richmond Herald) (of the College of Arms, London) and he agreed that HENRY<sup>4</sup> could not have been son of THOMAS<sup>3</sup>." All three Stratton books are at the Mormon Library in Salt Lake City.



For OCC 78

## ADDENDUM TO SHERMAN RESUME

COMPILED BY DORIS PALMER BUYS

All researchers interested in the SHERMAN family need to be aware of recent (1985-1987) discoveries and research which appear to refute the allegation that the daughter GRACE of TOBIAS MAKIN(s) married JOHN SHERMAN who was the father of the emigrant, CAPTAIN JOHN SHERMAN. See page 98-102 of:

"SHERMAN GENEALOGY" (1920) by Thomas Townsend Sherman in OCCGS LIBRARY: Even though the Will of TOBIAS MAKIN is quoted (apparently verbatim) on page 98 and he specifically refers to "GRACE SHERMAN, his daughter," and also to "GRACE my daughter and to JOAN my daughter" articles appearing in THE AMERICAN GENEALOGIST in 1985 and 1987 allege that JOHN SHERMAN's wife, GRACE, was not the daughter of TOBIAS MAKIN! (See pp.98-101, 105-108 of "SHERMAN GENEALOGY.")

See also: NEHGR (1897) Vol.51:309-315 an article entitled "ANCESTRY OF REV. JOHN SHERMAN and CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN" by "a Descendant of CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN", wherein the probability of the two MAKIN sisters being the wives of the two SHERMANs is set forth, i.e. (page 313):

"As to EDMUND SHERMAN who is mentioned in the will of TOBIAS MAKIN... it is probable that he is the EDMUND SHERMAN who was the father of the Rev. JOHN SHERMAN; that he married JOANE MAKIN is not improbable" and "GRACE MAKIN called by TOBIAS 'GRACE SHERMAN my daughter' may very plausibly be supposed to be our GRACE who married first JOHN SHERMAN, second THOMAS ROGERS and (when she died) was GRACE PORTER, widow."

On page 310 the author has incorrectly given GRACE SHERMAN still another (4th) husband, to wit: "After the death of THOMAS ROGERS, his widow, GRACE SHERMAN ROGERS, married for her third husband WILLIAM PALMER, widower. PALMER's daughter, MARTHA, by a former wife, had married (GRACE SHERMAN's son) CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN."

See "WALTER PALMER OF STONINGTON, CONNECTICUT," by the undersigned (1986) which includes the above WILLIAM PALMER of Hampton, N.H. as an allied family which shows conclusively that he was never married to his daughter's (MARTHA PALMER SHERMAN) mother-in-law, GRACE SHERMAN ROGERS PORTER. In this volume the Will of said WILLIAM PALMER clearly identifies his widow as ANN. (See ALLIED FAMILIES, pages 820-828 for this WILLIAM PALMER.) In addition to the above listed THOMAS SHERMAN volume and the NEHGR article, three more SHERMAN volumes were published by BERTHA STRATTON in the 1950's and 1960's, all of which continue listing the wife of JOHN SHERMAN as GRACE MAKIN and her sister, JOAN, as the wife of EDMUND SHERMAN. (See p. 928 of the Bibliography to the Walter Palmer Genealogy for the three Stratton books.) This Walter Palmer Genealogy is in OCCGS Library and all other leading libraries.

See also pp. 844-855 in Palmer Genealogy for THE SHERMAN FAMILY, an allied line. See also pp. 878-886 in Palmer Genealogy for THE ANDREW WARD(E) FAMILY, also an allied line inasmuch as this emigrant's wife, HESTER SHERMAN, is said to have been the daughter of EDMUND SHERMAN, JR. and his wife, JOAN MAKIN (sister to GRACE MAKIN). See also "Families of Old Fairfield" by Donald Lines Jacobus (page 540) where the author writes about this EDMUND SHERMAN and explains "He may have married JOAN MAKIN, dau of TOBIAS MAKIN... but the evidence seen does not seem conclusive."

ADDENDUM TO SHERMAN RESUME

(MAY 1989)

ATTACHMENTS FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE READER:

- 1) NEH&GR (1897) VOL. 51:309-315.
- 2) TAG (1985) July/Oct pp. 79-82
- 3) TAG (1987) April - VOL. 62, No. 2, pp. 65-77
- 4) TAG (1987) July - VOL. 62, No. 3, pp. 161-170

It was not until late in 1986 that the undersigned first saw the 1985 TAG article refuting GRACE MAKIN as the wife of JOHN SHERMAN--too late to do anything about this information in her WALTER PALMER GENEALOGY. It seems incredible that after sixty years of all books and articles continuing the assertion that JOHN SHERMAN's wife was GRACE MAKIN, evidence would appear now that this was incorrect; even though the WILL of TOBIAS MAKIN seems to mention "my daughter GRACE SHERMAN" it appears the wife of JOHN SHERMAN was GRACE RAVENS, daughter of the Rev. RICHARD RAVENS and that she was "probably born in Suffolk County ca 1591 and died at Watertown, Mass. on 3 June 1662." Whether or not additional and recent research has been done in England and in this country on TOBIAS MAKIN and his children is unknown to the undersigned. According to his Will he named his children including a daughter, GRACE SHERMAN, and a daughter JOAN, and several sons.

Prepared by DORIS PALMER BUYS  
May 1989

## ANCESTRY OF REV. JOHN SHERMAN AND CAPT. JOHN SHERMAN.

By a Descendant of Capt. JOHN SHERMAN.

THE Genealogical Gleanings of Mr. Waters in the April and July numbers (1896) of the REGISTER contain a number of wills which throw light on the lineage of the Shermans of Dedham, England, and Watertown, Mass.

It is proposed to call attention to the information given in some of these wills concerning Rev. John Sherman and Capt. John Sherman of Watertown.

The accompanying Pedigree table shows their descent from Henry<sup>1</sup> Sherman, the elder of Colchester, whose will is dated 1589 [281].\*

Samuel<sup>2</sup> Sherman, a son of Edmund<sup>2</sup> Sherman, by his second wife Anne Clere, and a grandson of Henry<sup>1</sup> Sherman the elder of Colchester, made his will in 1648 (892).

It contains valuable information of his relatives in New England, confirming and adding to our knowledge of the family.

He gives legacies to Rev. John Sherman and Samuel, his brother, and to their sisters and to their mother. He mentions their father, and places their legacies in the hands of Edmund, their brother, to be sent over by him to New England. We read in the will of legacies:

"To my loving sister Sherman, Edmund's widow."

This Edmund, whose widow is Samuel's "loving sister Sherman," was a half brother of the testator and was the father of Rev. John. According to Savage, he was at Wethersfield† in 1635, and went to New Haven, where he died in 1641.

He was the "Olde Father Shirman" of whom, in New Haven Colony Records, Vol. 1, page 52, we read:

"3 Mon. 1641. An Inventory and will of Olde Father Shirman was delivered into Court."

Unfortunately the will and the inventory are missing, and no copy or account of them can be found.

Samuel Sherman's will is dated 1643. Edmund died as has been said in 1641. There is little doubt but that he was the "Olde Father Shirman" who died in New Haven, and that his widow was the "Widd" Sherman who received an allotment of land in New Haven with the other first planters of the town.

The "cousin Edmund Sherman" in this will was Rev. John's brother who came to Watertown and returned to England. He was doing business and in correspondence with friends and relatives in New England, and could easily send over these legacies.

Bond, in his History of Watertown, page 1088, says, in 1663 he sent a power of attorney to his brother Rev. John Sherman of Watertown, to bring suit against "the assignees" for two broadcloths sent over to Thomas Hammond.

Three sisters of Rev. John were here in New England. One, the youngest, is not named; another was Grace, and the third was Ester Ward,

\* The figures in brackets refer to pages in Vol. 50 (1896) of the REGISTER, where the wills referred to may be read.

† Memorial History of Hartford County, Vol. 2, p. 437.

who was probably the wife of Andrew Ward of Watertown 1634, Wethersfield 1635, a very prominent and influential man. He and his brother-in-law, Samuel Sherman, were leaders in the settlement of Stamford, Conn., in 1640.

The testator speaks of his brother Richard, who died in Boston, and whose will is in Vol. ix., p. 227 of the Register, and of the two children of Richard, Samuel and Alice. He also sends £10 in linen cloth and shoes to his sister Mary Bacon in New England.

The Sherman ancestors of Rev. John Sherman were: Edmund,<sup>2</sup> who came to New England and died in New Haven (Edmund,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>).

As to Edmund<sup>2</sup> Sherman (Henry,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) there is no evidence that he came to this country. He married Judith Anger and is called by his sister Anne Wilson in her will in 1638 [390], "my brother Edmund Sherman of Colchester." She speaks in her will of her daughter Phoebe Barnard of New England, and had her brother Edmund been in New England in 1638 it is not likely he would be described as of Colchester.

This Anne Wilson was Anne Sherman (Henry,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) who married 1st Anthony Whiting and 2d Thomas Wilson.

The parentage of Capt. John Sherman, Watertown freeman, May 17, 1637, is not so easily traced. Some of his descendants may be interested in the reasons which may be given for thinking that he was the son of John<sup>3</sup> Sherman (Henry,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) and of Grace Makin, daughter of Tobias Makin of Fingrinhoe, County Essex, England, whose will [286] is dated May 14, 1610.

These Sherman wills show that Anne Sherman (Edmund,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) married John Anger. In her will dated 1625 [403] is this bequest:

"I give to the two children of the wife of Thomas Rogers, John Sherman and Richard Sherman, my kinsmen, ten shillings a piece at their ages of one and twenty."

This bequest tells that Thomas Rogers married a widow whose former husband was named . . . . Sherman, by whom she had these two children, John Sherman and Richard Sherman.

It also follows that the father of these two children was dead in 1625, for that is the date of Anne Anger's will.

It will be shown that this John Sherman was our Capt. John, and that this Thomas Rogers was the Thomas Rogers who came to Watertown, Bond says probably in 1630, and was made freeman May 17, 1637, and who died November 12, 1638, aged 50, whose house lot in Watertown Capt. John Sherman bought.

Thomas Rogers had one child by this widow Sherman, a daughter Elizabeth, who married Daniel Smith.

After the death of Thomas Rogers, his widow Grace Sherman Rogers married for her third husband William Palmer, widower.

Palmer's daughter Martha, by a former wife, had married Capt. John Sherman. They were married before Thomas Rogers died, for their first child John Sherman was born November 2, 1638.

William Palmer died after 1650, for in that year he agreed to release to his son-in-law John Sherman, land in Great Ormsby, Co. Norfolk, England. It is supposed he came from that place. His widow Grace Sherman Rogers Palmer married for her fourth husband Roger Porter, widower, who died April 3, 1654, aged 71.\*

\* For Palmer, Porter, Rogers, Sherman, Smith, see Bond's Hist. Watertown, pp. 384, 407, 412, 430, 439, 865, 913, 934, 936, 1012, 1013, 1014, 1088, 1089, and Mass. Colony Records, Vol. 4, pp. 248 and 264.

In Mass. Colony Records, Vol. 4, p. 232 we read:

1655, May 29: "In answer to the petition of Grace Porter craving the favor of this Court for liberty to sell the house and lands, she stands possessed of mentioned in her petition: The Court grants her request, so as Daniel Smith of Watertown, husband of the daughter of Thomas Rodgers, have notice given him by Jno Sherman of the Court condescension, unless the said Smith at the next session of this Court shall show cause to the contrary."

Grace Porter died in Watertown, leaving a will proved June 17, 1662.

It will be seen from an abstract of her will which follows that she was the mother of Capt. John Sherman, and this fact proves that the John Sherman described in the will of Anne Anger, as one of the two children of the wife of Thomas Rogers, was our Capt. John Sherman, and this being so, Thomas Rogers must be identical with the Thomas Rogers who came to Watertown and died in 1638.

Grace Porter gives nothing to the children of William Palmer or Roger Porter, but only to children of her blood. An abstract of her will is as follows:

After devises to her "son John Sherman and to her daughter Elizabeth Smith" (who was her daughter by Thomas Rogers, and widow of Daniel Smith who died 1660), and after legacies to "her grandchildren," each of whom she names, viz.: to Daniel Smith, who was son of her daughter Elizabeth Rogers, and to John, Martha, Mary, Sarah and Joseph Sherman, all the children then living of Capt. John Sherman, she directs the residue to be divided equally between "her said son John Sherman, and her said daughter Elizabeth Smith." "My brother John Coolidge and Lieutenant Richard Beers to be executors."

My cousin John Sherman to be overseer, to whom "I give as followeth: to my said cousin Sherman the sum of forty shillings, and twenty shillings apiece to each of my said executors, brother John Coolidge and Lieutenant Beers."

"Witnesses John Sherman and Mary Sherman."

The will is not dated.

On one page of the inventory of this residue, a note about the division of Grace Porter's estate says:

"In case their brother in England shall legally obtain against the estate that they jointly and equally do tender estate for satisfying the same that so neither side may be unequally represented by this award. The 8th of July, 1662, Simon Willard, Richard Russell, Thomas Danforth."

"Their brother in England" is without doubt the Richard Sherman described in the bequest in Anne Anger's will, as one of the two children of the wife of Thomas Rogers.

Mr. Savage in his Genealogical Dictionary says Capt. John Sherman died January 25, 1691, aged 76, which makes 1615 the year of his birth.

In looking through these wills to find the father of Capt. John two facts which have been brought to light in the preceding pages are of great assistance, to wit: that Capt. John's father died before 1625, and that his mother's christian name was Grace. So that none of the grandsons of Henry<sup>1</sup> the elder of Colchester, who are known to have been living after 1625, and none of those who died before 1625 leaving a widow surviving whose christian name was other than Grace, could have been the father of our Capt. John.

Applying these tests to the grandsons of Henry<sup>1</sup> who are mentioned in these wills, the evidence is now submitted which leads to the conclusion that Capt. John Sherman's ancestry is John<sup>2</sup>, Henry<sup>2</sup>, Henry<sup>1</sup>.

In the will of Henry<sup>1</sup> the elder of Colchester (281) are the names of his sons living in 1589, to wit:

Henry,<sup>2</sup> Edmund<sup>2</sup> and Robert<sup>2</sup>.

Robert<sup>2</sup>, "Doctor in Phisick," lived in London. He had two sons Robert and Richard, neither of them mentioned in the will of their grandfather in 1589. We hear no more of them after their father's will in 1602 (284). It does not seem probable that either of them would have been old enough if living in 1615, the year of Capt. John's birth, to have been his father. He left surviving a widow Bridget.

Edmund<sup>2</sup> had by his first wife Anne Pelatte three sons, viz: Edmund,<sup>3</sup> Richard<sup>3</sup> and Bezaleel,<sup>3</sup> and by his second wife Anne Cleare three sons: Samuel,<sup>3</sup> John<sup>3</sup> and Benjamin.<sup>3</sup> (See his will [283] and his wife's will [284]). All these six sons were living after 1625, except Bezaleel.

Edmund<sup>3</sup> is the Edmund Sherman who died in New Haven in 1641.

Richard<sup>3</sup> died in Boston in 1660.

Bezaleel<sup>3</sup> died in 1618 (288) leaving a daughter Ursula and a son John. The legacy to the son John in Ann Anger's will (403) shows he is not our Capt. John, to whom also she gives a legacy calling him one of the two children of the wife of Thomas Rogers. He left a widow surviving—Priscilla.

Samuel.<sup>3</sup> His will was made in 1643 (391) and in it he mentions as living then his brothers John<sup>3</sup> and Benjamin.<sup>3</sup>

Take now the sons of Henry<sup>2</sup>:

In his will (285) he names six sons as living in 1610, to wit: Henry,<sup>3</sup> Nathaniel,<sup>3</sup> Daniel,<sup>3</sup> John,<sup>3</sup> Ezekiel<sup>3</sup> and Edmund<sup>3</sup> who is spoken of as Edmund of Colchester in some of the wills.

Henry<sup>3</sup> made his will in 1642 (393).

Ezekiel<sup>3</sup> and Edmund<sup>3</sup> are mentioned as living in the will of their sister Anne Wilson in 1638 (390).

Nathaniel<sup>3</sup> was baptized July 11, 1582 (415). His will in 1615 (287) tells us of but two sons Nathaniel and Joseph. He left a widow surviving—Priscilla.

Daniel<sup>3</sup> was married to Christian Chapman in 1601 (414). He is not mentioned after the will of his mother Susan Sherman in 1610 (286). He had a son John whose will dated 1658 (395) shows conclusively he is not Capt. John. Daniel<sup>3</sup> left a will dated April 1, 1633, which is not in the Gleanings of Mr. Waters. A brief abstract of this will is given at the end of this article.

Samuel,<sup>3</sup> who is not mentioned in the will of his father but is mentioned in the will of his mother Susan Sherman 1610 (286) had probably a wife Philippa, by whom he had five children; whose baptisms are given on pages 415-416. One transcriber of the Dedham Parish Register copies the burial of Sara Sherman thus:

"1612 Dec. 5, Sara dau. of Samuel and Phillipa Sherman."

But in the burials on page 417, Phillipa happens to be omitted.

It is evident then that neither of these six sons of Henry<sup>2</sup> was Capt. John's father. The only son of Henry<sup>2</sup> now left is John.<sup>3</sup> Of him nothing is known after the will of his mother Susan Sherman in 1610 (286).

In the absence of direct evidence the result of this process of elimination must determine the question, and John<sup>3</sup> Sherman the son of Henry<sup>2</sup> and

grandson of Henry<sup>1</sup> the elder of Colchester, must be accepted as the father of our Capt. John.<sup>4</sup>

As to Edmund Sherman who is mentioned in the will of Tobias Makin which is dated 1610 (286).

It is probable that he is the Edmund<sup>3</sup> Sherman (Edmund,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) who was the father of Rev. John Sherman.

That he married Joane Makin is not improbable.

If Tobias Makin's will is read with care it will be seen that he does not say that his daughter Grace Sherman is the wife of Edmund Sherman, nor that Richard Sherman the son of Edmund Sherman is his grandchild, though from the context, this legacy to Richard following the legacy to his grandchild Elizabeth Potter, the inference is a fair one that he was his grandchild, and this inference is supported by the baptism of Dedham Parish Register (page 416) where we read:

"1608 Oct. 16, Richard son of Edmund and Jone Sherman."

Grace Makin called by Tobias "Grace Sherman my daughter" may very plausibly be supposed to be our Grace Porter who married first John Sherman, and second Thomas Rogers. His place in the Rogers family is not ascertained.

Here it may be said that John Rogers, the famous preacher of Dedham, owned land in Fingrinhoe where Tobias Makin lived, for in (Vol. 41, page 175 Register) he and his wife Dorothy sell it, and that Rev. Richard Rogers (Vol. 41, page 167 Register) makes "son Makin" one of the overseers of his will, and that a Thomas Makin was one of the witnesses of Ann Anger's will (403).

Evidently the Rogers and Makin families were intimate, and also acquainted with the Shermans.

It may be noticed that John Sherman and Mary Sherman were witnesses of Grace Porter's will. They were without doubt Rev. John Sherman and his wife Mary. Grace calls him "my cousin" which is not inconsistent with the theory that Rev. John's mother might be her sister; cousin often meaning in those days nephew and niece.

There is a tradition which has come down in one branch of the Sherman family from a grandson of Capt. John, that the Rev. John and Capt. John were cousins in the modern meaning of the word, their fathers being brothers. It is now known that their fathers were not brothers, but if their mothers were sisters the tradition would be nearer the truth than most traditions are.

It is not forgotten that Grace Porter in her will calls John Coolidge her brother, implying she was Grace Coolidge before marriage, but though a strong point, it may not be thought to be conclusive. Some evidence has been given against it. She might have called John Coolidge her brother, if his wife, whose family name is not known, should have been a sister of either of Grace's four husbands.

That Grace Porter was the mother of Capt. John Sherman is a fact. It would be gratifying to know whether she was Grace Coolidge or Grace Makin or of some other family, and also to know whether Joan Makin married Edmund<sup>3</sup> Sherman (Edmund,<sup>2</sup> Henry<sup>1</sup>) and was the mother of Rev. John.

The facts suggesting these questions deserve to be noticed, but the questions must wait for a satisfactory answer until evidence of a positive character shall be found to determine them.



It was thought the Parish Register of Fingrinhoe might give the marriages of the Makins and Shermans, but that Parish Register has no entry earlier than 1653, and these marriages were before 1610.

## WILL OF DANIEL SHERMAN.

Daniel Sherman of Dedham, April 1, 1633, proved April 15, 1634. Sons Henry, Daniel, John and Edmund. Daughters Mary, Susan, Christian and Martha. Kinsman Robert Smith. Brother Henry Sherman. Wife Sarah executrix.

## WILL OF GRACE PORTER.

Middlesex County, Mass. Probate.  
File 12652.

Know all men by these presents that I, Grace Porter, widdow, of Watertown in the County of Middlesex in New England, inhabitant, being in perfect memory but under the afflicting hand of the ever gracious God, my Lord and maker, not knowing how soone it may be his good pleasure to call me out of this evill world; after solemn profession of unfayned willingness to resigne to his Sovereigne disposal and of an humble confidence and trust in his rich mercy and free grace in Jesus Christ for what concerns my everlasting estate in another world; I do for the ordering of what temporall estate I shall leave behind me, after my debts payd and funerall expences discharged, make this my Last will and testament: giving and bequeathing as followeth

Imprimis I give to my Sonne John Sherman my dividend of upland.

Item. I do give to my daughter Elisabeth Smith all my marsh being by estimation foure acres more or lesse to be to her and her sonn Daniel after her.

Item. I do give to my said daughter Elisabeth all my wearing clothes and all my linnen and also my great kittle.

Item. I doe give to my grand child Daniel Smith my cow that is with calf.

Item. I doe give my other cow to my grand child John Sherman.

Item. I doe give to my grand child Martha Sherman my warming pan.

Item. I doe give to my grand children Mary Sherman and Sarah Sherman to each of them two pewter dishes: and to Joseph Sherman five shillings.

My will is, that the remainder of my estate be divided equally between my said son John Sherman and my said daughter Elisabeth Smith each of them to possess and enjoy their part or half which by such division shall be set out for them.

Whereas I am indebted to my daughter Elisabeth Smith, my mind is she should be satisfied in the first place in such goods as shee shall choose.

I doe also hereby declare, that for such things as I left with my said daughter Elisabeth (of the particulars of which, my son Sherman had a note) I had them againe, since, of her, soe that shee is not to be called for any account about them upon that or any other note to that purpose.

I do further hereby constitute and choose my brother John Cooledge and Lieutenant Richard Beers as executors of this will intreating my cousin Joh: Sherman as overseer, to see my mind full filled, unto whome I give as followeth to my said Cousin Sherman the sume of fourty shillings: and twenty shillings apiece to each of my said executors brother Cooledge and Lieutenant Beers.

This is my Last will and Testament witness my hand and seal

Subscribed sealed and  
delivered in the presence  
of us John Sherman  
Mary Sherman

Grace O Porter  
her mark

(In the margin)

Leut. Beers & Jno Cooledge appearing in Court 17 (27), 4, 1662, openly disclaimed their executorship to this will. Thomas Danforth. R.

Mr. Jno Sherman & Jno Cooledge appearing in Court at Charlestown the 17th (4) 1662, attested on oath that they were present w<sup>th</sup> Grace Porter, deceased signed & published this her last will and testament & that she was of a disposing mind w<sup>th</sup> she so did being about a year now past.

Entered & Recorded in the Register of Wills lib. 2, page 41. 17 (4) 1662.  
Thomas Danforth. E.

Inventory of Grace Porter ye relique of Roger Porter now deceased taken June 14th, 1662.

On one page of Inventory a note about division of Grace Porter's estate says "In case their brother in England shall legally obtain against the estate, that they joyently & equally do tender estate for satisfying the same that so neither side may be unequally represented by this award."

This 8th of July 1662.

Simon Willard  
Richard Russell  
Thomas Danforth

## MARRIAGES AND BAPTISMS IN RAYNHAM, MASS.

Copied by FRANCIS E. BLAKE, Esq., from manuscripts found among papers of Rev. Peres Fobes, D.D., of Raynham.

[Concluded from page 292.]

## MARRIAGES (Continued).

THIS CERTIFIES, That the intentions of Marriage between Mr. Enoch Robinson & Miss Sophia V. Saunders both of Raynham have been entered in the Town Clerk's Office, and published in the Town of Raynham, according to law.

Certified at Raynham aforesaid, this fifteenth day of June in the year of our Lord, one thousand eight hundred and thirty three.

Attest.

Wm. Snow, Town Clerk.\*

I hereby certify that the Intention of Marriage between Philip S. Dean of Taunton and Mary D. Bates of Raynham have been entered in the town Clerks office in said Taunton fourteen days and published in said Taunton according to Law Dated at Taunton this tenth day of April the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty two.

Attest

ALFRED WILLIAMS, Town Clerk.

This may certify that the Intention of Marriage between William H. Williams of Taunton and Elizabeth W. Shaw of Raynham have been entered in the Town Clerks office in Taunton and published in said Town according to Law.

Taunton Nov. 10, 1833.

Attest ALFRED WILLIAMS, T. Clerk.

## BAPTISMS.

April 6, 1783 Bethiah was Baptized the Daughter of Seth & Hannah Robinson.

April 20th, 1783 Gustavus the Son of Zephaniah and Abigail Leonard.

April 27th, 1783 Silas the Son of Nathaniel Dean and Elizebeth.

August 10th, 1784 Anna the Daughter of Jonathan Shaw and Lydia.

Sept. [7] 1783 Artemas the Son of Capt. Joshua and Hannah Leonard.

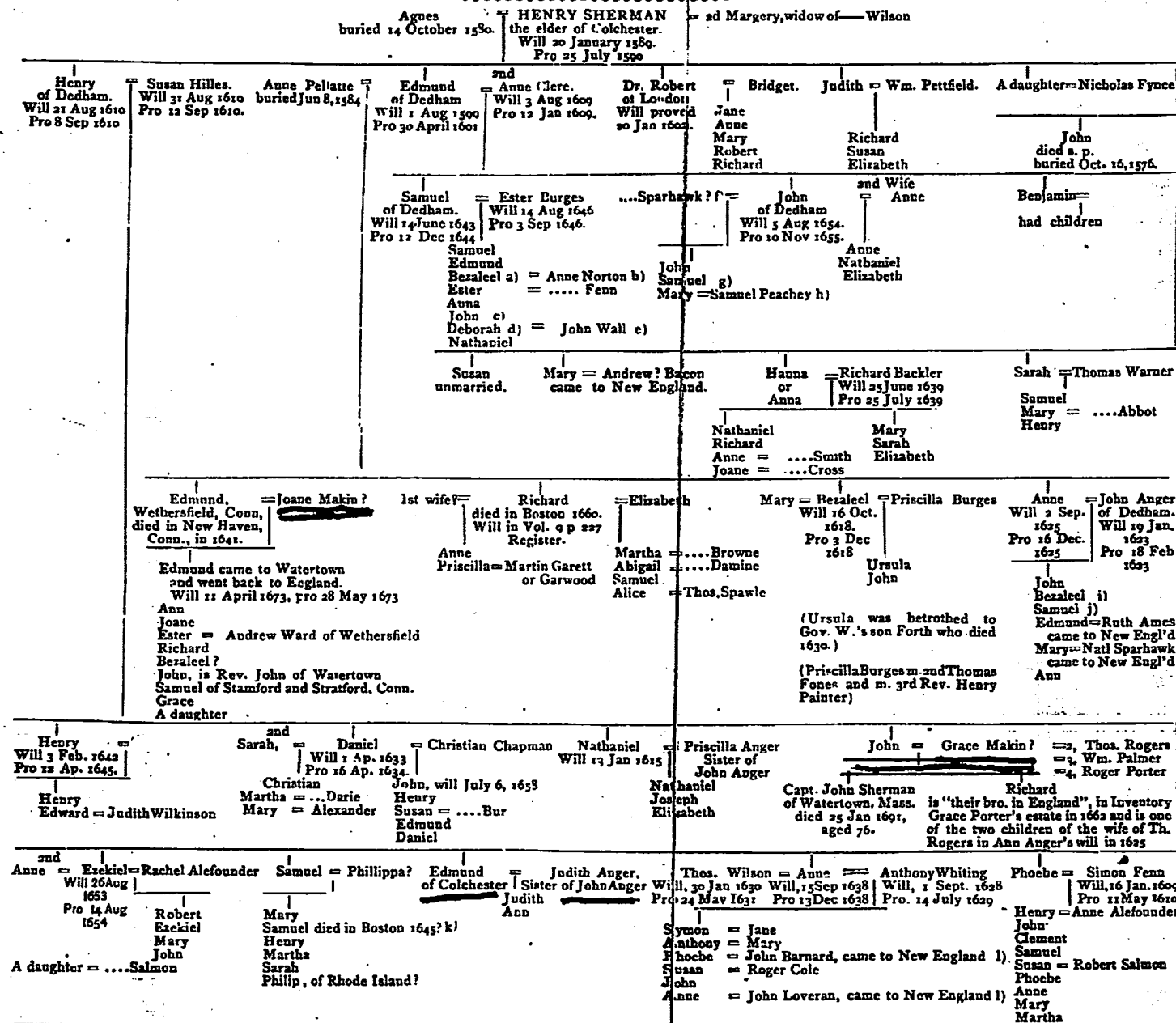
October 27th, 1783 Josiah the Son of John and Welthy Robinson.

October 29 1783 William the Son of Jonathan and Phebe Robinson.

Feb [19] 1784 Jonathan the Son of Wiliam and [Lyd]ia French.

\*[Note in pencil.] Married June 23rd, 1833 by Rev. Simeon Doggett of Raynham, per memo. in Almanac.

# SHERMAN PEDIGREE.



a) Will 10 May 1687, pro. 15 Sept. 1647, p. 306.  
b) Will 26 Nov. 1720, pro. 2 Nov. 1722, p. 397.  
c) Will 16 March 1670, pro. 20 March 1671, p. 356.  
d) Will 31 Aug. 1684, pro. 9 July 1685, p. 251.  
e) Will 26 March 1678, pro. 2 June 1678, p. 250.  
f) Will 29 March 1693, pro. 30 Sep. 1693, p. 410.  
g) Will 30 Dec. 1658, pro. 28 Feb. 1658, p. 304.  
h) From another transcript of Dedham Parish Register.  
i) Bond's History, Watertown, pp. 15 & 353.  
j) Supposed to be referred to in will John Ward, Vol. 46, p. 318.  
k) Bond's History, Watertown, pp. 15 & 353.

a) Their gr. granddaughter Mary Vincent married Neil, third Earl of Roseberry, grandfather of the present (fifth) Earl of Roseberry.

From the wills of the Sherman's and their kinsfolk in Vol. 50 N. E. H. & G. Reg. pp. 249 to 288 & pp. 285 to 424 and from the transcript of Dedham Parish Register pp 414 to 417.

WAS TOBIAS MAKIN AN ANCESTOR  
OF THE NEW ENGLAND SHERMANS?

By Myrtle Stevens Hyde  
and Douglas Richardson, M.A.

Tobias Makin of Fingringhoe, co. Essex, England, yeoman, executed his will on 14 May 1610, and it was proved on 10 Sept. 1610 (NEHGR 50:286-287; Henry F. Waters, Genealogical Gleanings in England, 2 vols. [Boston 1901; rpt. Baltimore 1969], hereafter Waters, 2:1169-70; Thomas Townsend Sherman, Sherman Genealogy in England and America [New York 1920], hereafter Sherman Gen., p. 98 [the most detailed version]). In his will, Tobias named his wife Katherine; sons John the elder (eldest son), John the younger, Thomas (youngest son), Samuel, Westbroome, Robert, and Tobias; daughters Grace Sherman, Joane [no surname], and Rebecca [no surname]; grandchild Elizabeth Potter; and [each with the identical bequest of £5 given to Elizabeth Potter, whom he identified as his grandchild] Richard Sherman, the son of Edmund Sherman, and Richard Weald, the son of Richard Weald of Kyrbie; Thomas Weald son of Thomas deceased; my kinsman John Weald, son of John Weald the younger; Mary Payne; Bridget Bury; Thomas Whiting supervisor.

In 1897, the year after Waters' abstract of this will appeared in NEHGR, an anonymous contributor to the same journal (51:309-15) suggested that Tobias was the father of Grace, wife successively of John Sherman (who was baptized in Dedham, co. Essex, on 17 Aug. 1585 and buried in Great Borkesley, co. Essex, on 24 Jan. 1615/6 [Sherman Gen. pp. 98-100]), Thomas Rogers, and Roger Porter; Grace Porter died in Watertown MA on 3 June 1662, ae ca. 70.\* The article also suggested that Tobias Makin's daughter Joan was the wife of Edmund Sherman, who died in New Haven CT in 3m [May] 1641; his widow was living on 14 June 1643 when she was named in the will of her brother-in-law Samuel Sherman as "my loving sister Sherman, Edmond's widow" (Sherman Gen. pp. 105-6). From Dedham, co. Essex, parish registers, it is known that Edmund's wife was named Joan: "1608 Oct 16 Richard son of Edmund and Jone Sherman baptized" (NEHGR 50:416). Dedham is some fifteen miles from Fingringhoe. The Makins had associations with the Dedham Shermons, for Samuel Makin, probably the son of Tobias Makin mentioned in

\*Henry Bond, Genealogies of the... Early Settlers of Watertown..., 2nd ed. (Boston 1860; rpt. Boston 1978), 2:865, 910, states that Grace married William Palmer of Newbury before she married Roger Porter, a conclusion repeated in NEHGR 51:310. This error apparently arose from a misquotation of her will, in which she mentioned granddaughter Martha Sherman. Grace's son John Sherman had married Martha, the daughter of William Palmer (see Charles Henry Pope, The Pioneers of Massachusetts... [Boston 1900; rpt. Baltimore 1977], pp. 342, 412, and Noyes, Libby, Davis, Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire [Portland ME 1926-39; rpt. Baltimore 1972], p. 527).

his will, surrendered land in Fingringhoe to John Wall, who married Deborah Sherman, a niece of the Edmund Sherman who died in New Haven in 1641 (Waters pp. 1133-34).

We have sought evidence to clarify the claimed Sherman connections of Tobias Makin's daughters Grace and Joan. Helpful information was found in four wills: that of his father John "Makyng," those of his wife's parents Thomas and Elizabeth Westbrome, and that of his son also named Tobias Makin. Abstracts follow (since the first is in print, it is given very briefly; the others were examined on LDS microfilms):

JOHN MAKYNG of Fingringhoe, co. Essex; will executed 16 March 1562/3, date of probate not included. To son John tenement called the Goore and other land, he paying to his sister Joan £10. To son "Toby" parcel of ground called Bockynges Brook, he paying Joan £10. To wife Agnes, various beasts, household stuff, a lease, and various acres of rye, etc. To servant Agnes and to servant John Chapmans. Executors to have profit of children's land until they are 21. Residue of goods to be divided among his three children. Executors: son-in-law Richard Weywould and John Pollye. Witnesses: Thomas Clarke, John Weywould, Thomas Stone. (F.G. Emmison, ed., Essex Wills (England) [Boston 1983] 2:139; Emmison equates Weald and Weywould in the name index.)

THOMAS WESTBROME of Abberton, co. Essex, yeoman; will executed 2 Dec. 1594, date of probate not included. Wife Elizabeth lands in parishes of Peldon and Abberton, co. Essex, and numerous specific items of household goods and livestock. Katherine Westbrome my son's wife. Elizabeth Paine my daughter. Margery Fookes and Elizabeth Whiting her daughter. Katherine my daughter wife of Tobias Maken. John Wiseman. Elizabeth Wealde. James Paine husband of my said daughter Elizabeth. Widow White. Agnes Leach'r my sister's daughter. Robert my son. Witnesses: Will'm Sammes, Abraham Fookes. (Archdeaconry of Colchester, Box 3, #80)

ELIZABETH WESTBROME of Abberton, co. Essex, widow; will executed 18 Jan. 1596[7], date of probate not included. Robert Westbrome my son lands in Easthorpe, Great Birch, Little Birch, Copford, Peldon, and West Mersea, co. Essex. Margery the wife of Abraham Fookes of Peldon [and named children]. Elizabeth Whiting the wife of Thomas Whiting of Peldon [and named children]. Children of Robert Westbrome, among them a son Thimble. Katherine Makyn my daughter the wife of Tobias Makyn of Fyngringhoe yeoman my house and land in Abberton and one croft holden of the manor of Pitthall called Squalopes; after death of Tobias to Henry Makyn son of Said Tobias and Katherine. Unto Henry Makyn, Tobias Makyn, John Makyn, Westbrome Makyn, Robert Makyn, Grace Makyn, and Johane Makyn £10 apiece, and unto Elizabeth Makyn £20. Male children to receive legacies at age 21 and female children at 18. [Named] children of Henry Sammes late of Totham, co. Essex, yeoman. [Named] children of James Payne of Abberton, co. Essex, taylor. Poor of Abberton and Peldon. Elizabeth Weald the wife of Richard Weald and Elizabeth her daughter. Thomas Leeche and Rafe Westbrome. Katherine Westbrome the wife of the said Robert my son. Robert Westbrome my son executor. If he refuse, then

the said Katherine my daughter executrix. Witnesses: [missing]. (Archdeaconry of Colchester, Box 4, #195)

TOBIAS MAKIN of Fingringhoe, Essex, singleman; will executed 7 Feb. 1620/1, proved 4 Dec. 1623. Rebecca Makin my sister; Grace Sherman and Joan Stone my two sisters; Westbroome and Robert Makin my brothers; brother-in-law Richard Stone shall take up lands, afterward to Samuel and Thomas Makin my brothers and to John Makin my brother John's son; brother John and Richard Stone executors. (Commissary Court of the Bishop of London, Box 45, #112 [wrongly cited in the printed index as #180])

The known information about the family of the elder Tobias Makin can now be tabulated as follows:

TOBIAS MAKIN of Fingringhoe, yeoman, son of John "Makyng" of Fingringhoe, co. Essex; under age when named in his father's will on 16 March 1562/3, in which Tobias is called Toby; died probably in Fingringhoe between 14 May 1610 and 10 Sept. 1610, the dates that his will was executed and proved.

He married before 1594, perhaps in 1580, KATHERINE WESTBROME, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (-----) Westbrome, who were married in Great Clacton, co. Essex, in 1548 (Percival Boyd's Essex Marriage Index) and lived in Abberton, co. Essex, which is adjacent to Fingringhoe. Katherine (Westbrome) Makin's brother Robert was married at Abberton in 1577 to Catherine Thimble (Boyd's Marriage Index), and her sister Elizabeth was married at Abberton in 1581 to James Paine (Boyd's Marriage Index says Francis Pain).

Children (MAKIN) of Tobias most, if not all, by his wife Katherine (Westbrome) (order unknown):

- i HENRY b. say 1581, living 18 Jan. 1596/7 when he was named in the will of his grandmother Elizabeth Westbrome; apparently d. bef. 14 May 1610, since he is not mentioned in his father's will.
- ii ELIZABETH b. say 1583, the namesake of her grandmother, who left her a legacy double that of her siblings; d. bef. 14 May 1610, poss. having married ----- POTTER and leaving a daughter Elizabeth, named in her father's will.
- iii GRACE b. say 1585; m. bef. 1610 ----- SHERMAN (prob. an Edmund Sherman, of an unknown place but in all likelihood a member of the Dedham, co. Essex, Sherman family and father of the Richard Sherman mentioned in Tobias Makin's will). Because she was still a Sherman in 1621, she could not be the Grace who m. (1) John Sherman, (2) Thomas Rogers by 1617 (when a child was baptized), and (3) Roger Porter. The possibility exists that Grace Makin married the immigrant Edmund Sherman of Dedham and was called Joan in error in a 1608 baptismal entry, but no supporting evidence has been found for this suggestion. The 1608 entry was for a son Richard, but Edmund already had at least four children. Why would Grace's father Tobias Makin single out their fifth child unless he carried

his grandfather's name? This child did not. Of course, it is possible that Edmund's earlier children were by another wife, but of this we have no evidence. In an effort to find further information about Grace (Makin) Sherman, we read wills of her possible relatives named Stone and Weald without finding mention of her.

- iv JOHN the elder b. say 1587, named 1596/7 and 1610 (as eldest son); he or his brother, John the younger, had a son John named in 1621.
- v TOBIAS b. say 1589; d. unm. or possibly as a childless widower prob. Fingringhoe bet. 7 Feb. 1620/1 and 4 Dec. 1623, the dates that his will was executed and proved.
- vi WESTBROME b. say 1591, named 1596/7, 1610, and 1621.
- vii ROBERT b. say 1593, named 1596/7, 1610, and 1621.
- viii JOAN b. say 1595, named 1596/7, 1610, and 1621; m. bef. 7 Feb. 1620/1 RICHARD STONE. She is a generation too young to be the Joan who m., prob. by 1599 (baptism of a child to Edmund and surely by 1608 (baptism of a child to Edmund and Joan), the Edmund Sherman who died in New Haven CT in 1641.
- ix JOHN the younger b. say 1597, named 1610; either he or his brother, John the elder, had a son John in 1621.
- x SAMUEL b. after 18 Jan 1596/7, say 1599, named 1610 and 1621. He is prob. the Samuel Makin who surrendered land in Fingringhoe to John Wall of Stratford, co. Suffolk, about fifteen miles away from Fingringhoe and across the river from Dedham, co. Essex (Waters 2:1133-34).
- xi THOMAS b. after 18 Jan 1596/7, say 1601, youngest son, named 1610 and 1621.
- xii REBECCA b. after 18 Jan 1596/7, say 1603, under 21 in 1610, surname Makin in 1621.

The evidence presented above proves that Joan Makin did not marry Edmund Sherman and that Grace Makin did not marry John Sherman. The possibility that Grace Makin married the Edmund Sherman who immigrated to New Haven CT is unlikely, but it has not been completely eliminated.

Hyde: 3628 Iowa Ave., Ogden UT 84403

Richardson: P.O. Box 1036, Bethany OK 73008

#### QUERIES

WHITMORE-THOMPSON: Need parentage and ancestry of Wealtha WHITMORE, m. Middleborough (?), Mass., ca. 1793 Thomas THOMPSON. She d. Middleborough ca. 1848.

BUMPAS-THOMPSON: Need parentage and ancestry of Mary BUMPAS, m. Middleborough (?), Mass., ca. 1769 Francis THOMPSON. She d. Middleborough ca. 1829.

--Mrs. Louise Hayes Burns, 9633 Hoot Owl Ave., Ladson SC 29456

HACKETT: Need ancestry and all information about Charles HACKETT, who was tenor at the New York Metropolitan Opera from 1920 to 1940. His descendants still vacation in Maine but do not know his ancestry.

--Dr. Beverly Hovanec, 2049 Janette Lane, Anaheim CA 92802



# The American Genealogist

Whole Number 246

Vol. 62, No. 2

April 1987

THE ENGLISH ORIGIN OF GRACE (RAVENS) (SHERMAN) (ROGERS) PORTER  
AND MARY (RAVENS) COOLIDGE OF WATERTOWN, MASS.:

New England Descendants of Ravens of Dedham, co. Essex

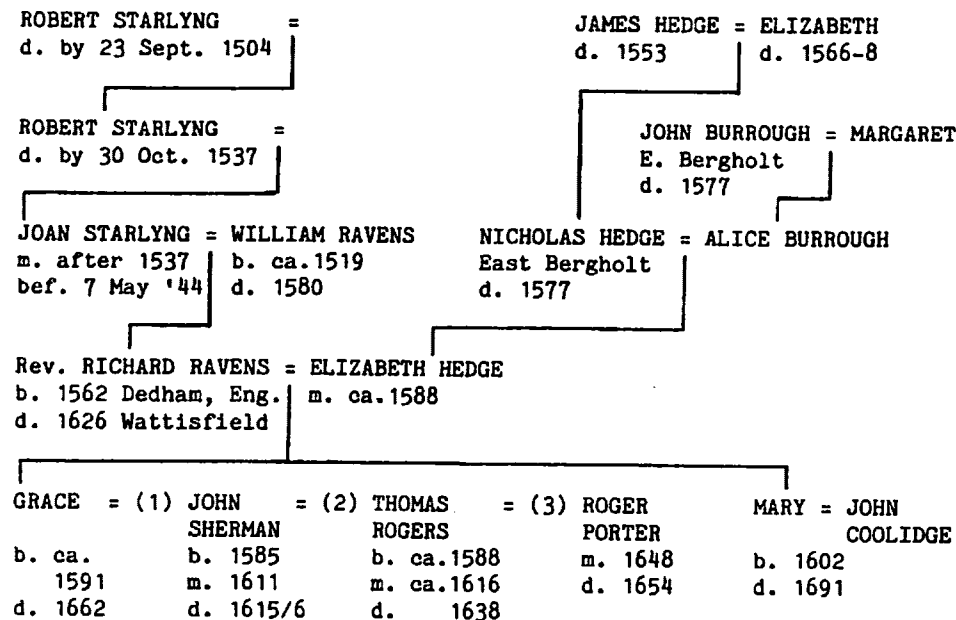
By Michael J. Wood

[Editors' Note: For many years, genealogists have tried to identify Grace, wife of John Sherman and Thomas<sup>1</sup> Rogers, and Mary, wife of John Coolidge, and to clarify the relationship between Mary and Grace. The commonly accepted belief that Grace was a Makin was shown to be false in TAG 61:79-82. Both Grace and Mary have now been fully identified by Mr. Michael J. Wood of London, England. The article that follows is an outgrowth of Mr. Wood's systematic study of all records relating to Dedham, co. Essex, and provides an excellent example of how studying an entire community can provide the answers to problems that seemed unsolvable. This article is also noteworthy for the variety of sources utilized, especially manorial court rolls, which, even though they are second in genealogical importance in England only to parish registers and probate records, are often ignored by both English and American researchers.]

In the July/October 1985 TAG, Myrtle Stevens Hyde and Douglas Richardson supplied the proof that Grace, wife successively of John Sherman of Dedham and Great Horkesley, co. Essex, England, of Thomas Rogers of Watertown, Mass., and of Roger Porter, also of Watertown, was not a daughter of Tobias Makin of Fingringhoe, co. Essex. A clue to her identity is given in her undated will proved on 17 June 1662 (Middlesex Co., Mass., PR File 12652; printed in full in NEHGR 51[1897]:314), in which she named "my brother John Coolidge." This clue is mentioned in the article on the early Coolidges in NEHGR 77(1923) at p. 272, which also refers to the will of John<sup>1</sup> Coolidge, dated 19 Nov. 1681, proved 16 June 1691 (Middlesex PR File 5094), in which he named his wife, Mary Coolidge, five sons, and two granddaughters, and Capt. John Sherman [son of Grace Porter], his "cousin." The witnesses were John Sherman and [his wife] Martha Sherman.

The English pedigree of John<sup>1</sup> Coolidge identifies him with the man of that name baptized at Cottenham, Cambridgeshire, on 16 Sept. 1604 (Henry Bond, Genealogies... of the Early Settlers of Watertown, 2nd ed. [Boston 1860], hereafter Bond, p. 744; see also NEHGR 80[1926]:401-15); although the pedigree is not absolutely proven, it is so nearly certain as to admit no reasonable doubt, due to the rarity of the surname combined with the distinctive forename "Simon" in both the English and Massachusetts families. The Cottenham pedigree shows that John Coolidge did not have a sister

## ANCESTRY OF GRACE RAVENS AND MARY RAVENS



Grace, and we know that Grace did not marry any brother of John, so the most likely reason for the kinship alluded to in their wills is that John Coolidge's own wife was a sister of Grace. Mary Coolidge died on 22 Aug. 1691, aged 88 (Bond p. 746).

Why should two men born as far apart as Cambridgeshire and Essex have married sisters? Well, John had an older brother, Simon Coolidge, baptized at Cottenham on 15 June 1600, who was surely identical with the Simon Coolidge who married Anne, daughter of Nathaniel Backler of Stratford, co. Suffolk, linendraper, who made his will on 5 April 1645 (proved 29 Aug. 1647). In his will, Nathaniel mentioned his daughter Anne Cooledge, and his grandchildren Symon Cooledge, Nathaniel Cooledge, Elizabeth Cooledge, and Anne Cooledge, who were to receive their legacies at the age of 18 (Prerogative Court of Canterbury [PCC] 181 Fines: PROB 11/201/322). Nathaniel Backler's son, John Backler of Stratford, grocer, in his will dated 5 March 1655[/6] (proved 6 June 1656) left "Symon Cooledge my brother-in-law" the money that Cooledge owed him. (PCC 238 Berkley: PROB 11/256/251)

Anne Backler was baptized at Stratford St. Mary on 30 July 1609 and married Simon Coolidge at Capel St. Mary, co. Suffolk, on 27 Jan. 1632[/3]. Stratford is just across the River Stour from Dedham, co. Essex, the home both of her sister Abigail, wife of John Blomfield, clothier, and of her uncle Richard Backler, whose wife Ann, nee Sherman, was

first cousin to the John Sherman who married Grace, later of Watertown.

It appears that the two young brothers, Simon and John Coolidge, moved from Cottenham to either Stratford or Dedham about the year 1620, and that both married local girls.

But who were the parents of Grace Sherman and Mary Coolidge? The answer comes from Boyd's Marriage Index for Suffolk, which includes the marriage at Wattisfield in 1611 of John Sherman and Grace Ravens (a 20th century transcript of the Wattisfield register, at the Society of Genealogists in London, reveals that the marriage took place on 26 Sept. 1611). Now, Wattisfield is in the north of Suffolk, not far from Yaxley, and it may be supposed that this marriage was of a member of a Sherman family then present in Yaxley, but -- as I shall show -- the then vicar of Wattisfield was the Rev. Richard Ravens, a native of Dedham, whose own sons Bezaleel, William, and Edmund, were to live and have their families in Dedham.

The pedigree of Ravens of Dedham begins with:

1 WILLIAM<sup>B</sup> RAVENS of Dedham, co. Essex, clothier, was born ca.1519 (from his age in a deposition cited below); he was buried at Dedham on 1 Aug. 1580. He married not later than, and probably shortly before, 7 May 1544 JOAN STARLYNG, daughter of Robert Starlyng of Dedham; she was buried at Dedham on 10 Oct. 1584 as "the widow Ravens."

The earliest reference I have found to Williams<sup>B</sup> Ravens is in the Court Roll of the Manor of Overhall and Netherhall (hereafter ONCR) for 7 May 1544 at the Public Record Office (DL 30/59/735) (the quotations from the court rolls in this article are abridged translations of the Latin in the original):

At this court it is found by the homage that Robt Sterlinge native tenant of this manor died many years ago seised of and in one cottage with garden adjoining containing half a rood called Launderers, late Thomas Palmers, as in year 20 Henry VII [1504-5] appears, and that Joan now wife of William Ravyns is his daughter and his next heir and of full age, who comes to this court in her own person and asks to be admitted to the said cottage with garden and is admitted tenant.

And to the same court comes the said William Ravyns and Joan his wife and in full court surrenders into the hands of the lord [of the manor] the said cottage with garden adjoining containing half a rood called Launderers late Thomas Palmer's, and the lord regrants the same to the aforesaid William and Joan his wife, their heirs and assigns.

There is a brief entry in ONCR for 30 Oct. 1537 (DL 30/59/735):

Robt Sterlyng died seised of and in certain lands held of this manor, and Joan Sterlyng is his daughter and next heir; therefore it is ordered &c.

Before the Reformation, the Manor of Overhall and Netherhall was owned by the Priory of Campsey Abbey, co. Suffolk, and was known as Dedham Campesse. The Court Roll for 23 Sept. 1504 (DL 30/59/734) records:

Robt Sterlyng who lately died surrendered by the hands of John Rande in the presence of Robt Lovekyn and Robt Pakyn and others of the homage one cottage with garden adjoining containing half a rood called Lavenders late of Thomas Palmer as in the year 20 Edward IV [1480-1] to the use of Robt Starlyng his son, to hold to himself and the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, paying his sisters according to the last will of the said Robert [the elder], and if the said Robert [the younger] die without heirs of his body lawfully begotten, the said cottage with garden to remain to John his son, to hold to himself and the heirs of his body lawfully begotten, and if the said John die without heirs of his body lawfully begotten, the said garden to remain according to the tenor and effect of the last will of the said Robert [the elder].

Unfortunately, the will of Robert Sterlyng the father has not survived. The Dedham Campesse Court Roll for 16 Jan. 1480/1 (DL 30/59/732) says: "Thomas Palmer outside the court surrendered by the hands of William Pekeryng bailiff of the lady [of the manor] in the presence of Thomas Smyth, John Bakeler and others of the homage, and Margaret wife of the said Thomas Palmer surrenders, one cottage with garden adjoining containing half a rood [i.e., an eighth of an acre] called Lavenders, late of Felice Cherche, before of Stephen Shyngilwode, formerly of Thomas Spark, in Dedham, to the use of Robt Starlyng his heirs and assigns."

The "custom of the manor" in both Overhall and Netherhall and in the Manor of Dedham Hall was "Borough English," that is, the youngest son inherited his father's land unless the father had willed otherwise. The ONCR for 1559 to 1577 is missing, but the corresponding roll for Dedham Hall says, under 17 April 1575 (DL 30/60/739), that after the death of William Forthe, gent., [of Hadleigh, co. Suffolk] on 15 Oct. 1573, his eldest son Robert had immediately "entered and intruded his demand as to his lands," but that John Forthe, the youngest son of William, was next heir according to the custom of the manor. In 1574, Thomas Seckford, lord of the manor, successfully took legal action against Robert Forthe, the elder son. During the proceedings, the steward testified that the copies of the relevant court rolls for Overhall and Netherhall were [as they still are], rather suspiciously, missing. Therefore, to support his case, Seckford called upon several of the senior copyholders to testify that to their knowledge all the land within the manor was held by copy of Court Roll and descended "according to the custom of the manor." These depositions, which are at the Public Record Office (DL 4/16/18), were taken on 30 June 1574 and include one by William Ravens of Dedham, clothier, aged 55. (Another deponent was Henry Sherman, aged 62, which, as Mrs. B.L. Stratton has demonstrated, proves that Henry was not, as T.T. Sherman had supposed, one of the sons

of Thomas of Yaxley [Thomas T. Sherman, Sherman Genealogy... (New York 1920) pp. 1, 4-10, 17-52, 61-73, 89-92; Bertha L. Stratton, New Light on Henry Sherman (1954) pp. 1-3, 9-11; Bertha L. Stratton, Transatlantic Shermans (1969) pp. 27, 55-59]).

On 26 April 1557, William and Joan Ravens surrendered their cottage and half a rood of garden called Launderers to the use of Henry Clarke, his heirs and assigns (ONCR: DL/30/60/737). Where they lived for the next fifteen years is not apparent, due to the gap already mentioned in the court rolls. In 1572, they acquired another house and garden, as shown in ONCR on 19 Sept. 1580 (DL 30/61/744):

To this court comes Joan Ravens widow and surrenders one house with garden adjoining containing half an acre held by fee farm of 12d rent by the year which the said Joan took to herself and her heirs together with William Ravens late her husband at a court general held here 30 Sept. 14 Elizabeth [1572] by the surrender of John Chaundeller as in the same appears, to the intent that the lord regrant the said tenement to the same Joan for the term of her life, and after her decease to Richard Ravens, son of the same Joan and the aforesaid William, and the heirs and assigns of the said Richard.

The records cited above prove that Joan, wife of William<sup>B</sup> Ravens, was the daughter and heiress of Robert Starlyng of Dedham, who died before 30 Oct. 1537, and the granddaughter of another Robert Starlyng, also of Dedham, who died before 23 Sept. 1504.

William Ravens died testate. An abstract of his will follows:

WILLIAM RAVENS of Dedham, clothier. 18 July 1580. To my son Richard Ravens my occupation with all things belonging, to be sold, and whatsoever it misseth of £20 to be made up to £20 and paid to him £4 a year, and the tenement that Trafforde dwelleth in after his mother's decease. The rest of my goods whether corn, cattle, cloth, or money to my wife. To my daughter Grace and her daughter Grace a silver spoon; also to her daughter Grace a weanel [i.e., an animal newly weaned] to be let out by her parents to the best advantage to her use till she is age 18. To my daughter Bridget and her daughter Elizabeth each a silver spoon; also to Bridget's two children a weanel likewise. To Richard my son two silver spoons. To my sister Baker 20s. To my son Cole my best cloak and to my son Page my best gown, they to be supervisors. My wife sole executrix. Witnesses: Ralphe Starlinge, Guil: Lewes, Richard Clarke, John Whitlock, Edmund Robinson.

Surrender[ed] 19 July into the hands of Ralph Starlinge and Robert Lytellburie and Habbakkuk Page the bailiff to the use of the will. Witnesses: Habakkuk Page, Edward Cole.

Proved 29 Dec. 1580 by [blank], widow and executrix. (PCC 51 Arundell: PROB 11/62/23)

[The witness who signed as "Guil: Lewes" (not Gall as printed in F.G. Emmison, Elizabethan Life, Vol. 4: Wills of Essex Gentry and Merchants [1978], hereafter Eliz. Life 4, p. 304) was William Lewes,

a clothier who was very active in local affairs.]

Children (RAVENS) of William<sup>B</sup> and Joan (Starlyng), all probably born in Dedham, co. Essex (there were almost certainly other children who died before the commencement of the Dedham parish register in 1560):

- 2 1 GRACE<sup>A</sup> b. say 1545; m. Dedham 1567[/8] EDWARD COLE of East Bergholt, co. Suffolk, yeoman.
- ii BRIDGET b. say 1548; bur. Dedham 14 Nov. 1599; m. there 15 May 1571 HABAKKUK PAGE of Dedham, who was dead by 26 Jan. 1608/9, according to the will of William Glover dated 26 Jan. 6 James [1608/9], proved 5 May 1609 (PCC 39 Dorset: PROB 11/113/303), an abstract of which is printed in Henry F. Waters, Genealogical Gleanings in England (Boston 1901), hereafter Waters, 1:582-83: "To the daughters of Habbakuk Page late of Dedham deceased 40s to be given to Mr. Ravens to be distributed amongst them." The name "Habbakuk" descended through one of their daughters into the Layman family of East Bergholt, where it was used for several generations. Peter Cole (No. 4.vii below) named John Layman in his will, Habbakuk Layman being a witness.
- iii WILLIAM bur. Dedham 10 Nov. 1560.
- iv MARY bur. Dedham 22 Nov. 1563.
- 3 v RICHARD bp. Dedham 1 April 1562.

2 GRACE<sup>A</sup> RAVENS (William<sup>B</sup>) was born probably in Dedham, co. Essex, say 1545; she probably died before 1 April 1606, the date of her husband's will, in which she is not mentioned; she married in Dedham on 12 Jan. 1567[/8] EDWARD COLE of East Bergholt, co. Suffolk, yeoman. He died probably in East Bergholt between 1 April 1606, when he executed his will, and 4 Feb. 1606[/7], when the will was proved. An abstract follows:

EDWARD COLE of East Bergholt, co. Suff., yeoman. 1 April 1606. Unto Robert Cole my son all my copyhold lands called Tintes, to him and his heirs forever. Unto my grandchild Simond Rosier £20 at age 21. Unto my brother-in-law Richard Ravens Minister of Wattesfield £4. Residue unto Edward Cole my son, sole executor. Witnesses: Richard Harris, John Maye, his mark.

M[emorandum]d that Edward Cole the elder did give a surrender into the hands of the lord of his tenements, messuages and lands holden of the manor of Oldhall in Eastbergholt to the use of his last will and testament, [by the hands of] Edward Cole the younger being instead of the bailiff, [in the presence of] Stephen Jobson & Frauncis Corbold two of the customary tenants of the manor aforesaid 2 May 1606.

Proved with one codicil at London 4 Feb. 1606[/7]. (An abstract appears in Waters 2:1208.) (PCC 16 Huddleston: PROB 11/109/123)

Children (COLE) of Edward and Grace<sup>A</sup> (Ravens); because the East Bergholt parish register does not commence until 1653, dates in this generation cannot be given accurately:

- 4 1 EDWARD.
- ii GRACE, named in the will of her grandfather, William Ravens, in 1580; bur. Barking, co. Suffolk, 19 May 1604; m. as his

first wife SIMON ROZIER of Needham Market, a hamlet in the parish of Barking, who married (2) Barking 31 May 1604 [12 days after his first wife's burial] BRIDGET FRUAR and had further issue. Simon made his will on 14 Nov. 1620, proved 24 Feb. 1631[/2] (East Suffolk Record Office, Ipswich [hereafter ESRO] W67/80).

Children (ROZIER) of Simon and Grace (Cole):

- 1 SIMON b. say 1598; mentioned in the wills of his grandfather Edward Cole (1606) and of his father (1620); married and had issue.
- 2 EDMUND bp. Barking 10 Aug. 1600; bur. there 17 Sept. 1601.
- 3 THOMAS bp. Barking 16 May 1602; named in the will of his father (1620); married and had issue.
- 4 GRACE bp. Barking 18 Dec. 1603; named in the will of her father (1620).

iii ROBERT of East Bergholt. He was either the yeoman whose will was dated 26 Dec. 1633 and proved 31 Jan. 1633[/4], naming his son Martin and his daughters Grace and Elizabeth (ESRO W/69/20), or the Robert Cole who died bef. 8 May 1637, when administration of his estate was granted to Bridget Barrett alias Cole, his late relict, bondsman John Barrett (ESRO A6/15/5). Further research on the Coles of East Bergholt is required.

3 Rev. RICHARD<sup>A</sup> RAVENS (William<sup>B</sup>) was baptized at Dedham, co. Essex, on 1 April 1562; under 5 April 1626, the Wattisfield, co. Suffolk, parish register includes "Richard Ravens, Clarke, minister of the Church of Wattisfield. Died on Monday night being the 3rd of April 1626, and was buried ye Wednesday ye 5th of April 1626." He married ca.1588 ELIZABETH HEDGE, daughter of Nicholas and Alice (Burrough) Hedge of East Bergholt, co. Suffolk; she was born ca.1566 and was living on 31 Oct. 1625, when her husband executed his will. For the evidence of her identity, see Appendix B, to appear with the second part of this article.

According to John Venn and J.A. Venn, Alumni Cantabrigiensis, Pt. 1 (Cambridge, Eng., 1922-24) 3:424, Richard was admitted pensioner at Queen's College, Cambridge, on 2 June 1578, then migrated to Corpus Christi College, where he matriculated in 1579. He obtained his B.A. in 1581-82 and his M.A. in 1585. He was licensed to teach grammar at East Bergholt in 1584, then on 29 Dec. 1591 was ordained priest at Norwich. On 25 Sept. 1593, he was elected schoolmaster at Dedham, a position he held until 1599 (Rev. Charles Alfred Jones, History of Dedham [Colchester 1907] p. 124), during which time, he lived "in the house at the church gate" owned by Edmund Sherman (whose will, dated 31 July 1599, is abstracted in Eliz. Life 4, pp. 307-8, and in Waters 2:1166-67). He was inducted vicar of Wattisfield, co. Suffolk, on 30 April 1599, where he remained until his death in 1626, living in a house owned by Edmund Sherman.

An abstract of his will follows:

RICHARD RAVENS of Wottesfyld, co. Suffolk, clerk. 31 Oct. 1625.  
 Unto my son Jonathan and to his heirs all my messuage and tenement newly builded wherein John Hasell now dwelleth, with the orchard and yard thereunto belonging. Elizabeth my beloved wife shall hold and enjoy all that my tenement or messuage wherein my son-in-law Anthony Milles now dwelleth, and all other my lands and hereditaments whatsoever (not by me otherwise herein given and bequeathed) for life, and Elizabeth my wife shall have the use and occupying of all my lease lands which I lately had of Mr. Hearne for life, and after her decease Jonathan my son shall have and hold to him and the heirs of his body all my lease lands, and if he shall depart this life without heirs of his body, the said tenement or cottage with all the former lands given to him shall remain unto the rest of my children or so many of them as shall then be living, vizt. unto Bezaliell, William, Edmund, Richard, Grace, Elizabeth, Marie, Helen and Sarah. After the decease of Elizabeth my wife, all the rest of my lands shall go likewise unto my forenamed children. Unto my daughter Sarah the two pieces of land which I lately purchased of William Burlingham now enclosed, lying in Church field, at age 21. If Sarah should die before age 21, the said lands to my sons that should then be living. Unto my son Jonathan one featherbed, and other household stuff. Unto my daughter Marie the bedstedell on [i.e. in] the chamber whereon I usually lie, and one flockbed. Unto Elizabeth my wife all my linen and L30, also L10 worth of my household stuff. Whereas I have willed and bequeathed all my lands and tenements after the decease of my wife and my son Jonathan unto all my children (that should then be living), my executors shall have the power to sell those lands and tenements to the best advantage, and the money shall be equally divided amongst all my children then living. Unto my son Jonathan L5. Unto my son Richard L5 at age 24. Unto the poor 20s. My sons Bezaliell and Edmund and William executors. Witnesses: John Cradocke, William Carter, the mark of William Pett.

Proved 25 May 1626 by the three sons and executors named. (PCC 59 Hele: PROB 11/149/17)

The fact that Richard Ravens did not see fit to mention his daughters' married names is unfortunate, and it might be supposed that they were all unmarried but for the fact that one of his tenants was Anthony Mills, his son-in-law; it is therefore reasonable to conclude that some of the others may also have been married. With the help of parish registers, we can assemble a list of his children.

Children (RAVENS) of the Rev. Richard<sup>A</sup> and Elizabeth (Hedge):

- 1 JONATHAN prob. b. East Bergholt, co. Suffolk, ca.1589; principal beneficiary of his father's will (1625); bur. Wattisfield, co. Suffolk, 26 Sept. 1626.
- 5 11 GRACE prob. b. East Bergholt ca.1591.
- 6 111 BEZALEEL bp. Dedham, co. Essex, 9 Dec. 1593.
- 1v ELIZABETH bp. Dedham 21 Dec. 1595; living 31 May 1634; m. Coddendam, co. Suffolk, 10 April 1621 ANTHONY MILLS, who was of Brantham, co. Suffolk, at the time of his death. He died intestate, administration of his estate being granted

to Elizabeth, his relict, on 31 May 1634, bondsman Edmund Ravens (ESRO A6/13/6).

Known children (MILLS) of Anthony and Elizabeth (Ravens), baptized at Wattisfield:

- 1 JOHN bp. 30 Jan. 1621[1/2].
- 2 RICHARD bp. 23 Nov. 1623.
- 3 ELIZABETH bp. 21 Feb. 1625[1/6].

- 7 v WILLIAM b. ca.1598.
- 8 vi EDMUND bp. Wattisfield 29 June 1600.
- 9 vii MARY bp. Wattisfield 14 Nov. 1602.
- viii RICHARD bp. Wattisfield 5 May 1605; living 1625; n.f.r.
- ix HELEN bp. Wattisfield 7 July 1607 (as Ellin); living 1625; n.f.r.
- x SARAH bp. Wattisfield 3 Nov. 1611; living 1625; n.f.r.

4 EDWARD COLE (Sarah<sup>A</sup> Ravens, William<sup>B</sup>) of East Bergholt, co. Suffolk, clothier; died between 18 Aug. 1649, when he executed his will, and 31 May 1652, when it was proved; he married as her second husband ABIGAIL (BRAND) CORNELIUS alias JOYNER, daughter of Peter Brand of Bildeston, co. Suffolk, clothier, by his wife Bridget. Abigail's first husband was John Cornelius alias Joyner, by whom she had a daughter Abigail, wife by 1632 of Edward Firmyn of Dedham. In his will dated 24 April 1615 and proved 29 June 1615, Peter Brand left "unto Abigall Cole my daughter now wife of Edward Cole L10 within one year. Unto Edward Cole son of Abigall L20 at age 21 years. Unto Grace Cole daughter of Abigall L30 at marriage or age 21 years. Unto Peter Cole son of Abigall L50 at age 21. Unto Abigall Cornelius als Joyner my grandchild, daughter of Abigall my daughter L30 at marriage or age 21." He then refers to a bond between himself and Richard Cornelius als Joyner now deceased concerning "such lands and tenements as the said Richard Cornelius als Joyner infeoffed John Cornelius his son and Abigall my daughter lying in Bentley co. Suffolk." (PCC 58 Rudd: PROB 11/125/463)

The will of Bridget Brand is worth quoting in full:

BRIDGETT BRAND of Bilston, co. Suffolk, diocese of Norwich, widow, being aged. 24 Feb. 8 Charles [I] 1632. Unto Abigalle Firman my grandchild, wife of Edward Firman of Dedham, L20. After the death of Abigale Firman the L20 shall be paid unto Robert Firman her son, to be paid it by Edward Firman his father, upon this condition, that Edward Firman shall become bounden unto Edward Cole of Eastbergholt my son-in-law to be paid back again the L20, to be equally divided amongst all the children of Edward Cole and Abigale my daughter after the death of Abigale Firman and the death of Robert Firman her son if he happen to depart this life before age 21 years. Unto Abigale Firman my grandchild one posted bed as it now standeth in my chamber at Billston. Unto Edward Cole my grandchild L20 within six months. Unto six of the other children of my daughter Abigalle Cole and Edward Cole of Eastbergholt L10 apiece, that is, to Peter Cole, to



John Cole, to Grace Cole, to Sarah Cole, to Mary Cole, and to Abigalle Colé, at their several ages of 21 years. My executor shall allow unto every one of the said children reasonable use of their portions. Unto the youngest daughter of Sarah Welde my daughter late of Dublin in the Kingdom of Ireland £20 at age 21 years or marriage. Unto Thomas Andruas my grandchild 40s at age 21. Unto Marie Andruas my grandchild £10 at age 21 or within two months after my decease. Unto Thomas Andruas of Bilston my son-in-law 12d. And to Daniel Weld my son-in-law 12d. Unto the poor inhabitants of the Town or parish of Billston 20s. The remainder of my household stuff equally amongst seven of the children of my daughter Abigale Cole and Edward Cole. Residue unto Edward Cole my son-in-law, sole executor. Witnesses: John Layman, Edward Cole, Jr.

Proved at London 19 Sept. 1633 by the executor. (PCC 79 Russell: PROB 11/164/171)

Edward and Abigail Cole each left wills. Edward's was very briefly abstracted in Waters 1:31. A fuller abstract follows:

EDWARD COLE of East Bergholt, co. Suff., clothier. 18 Aug. 1649. Unto Abigail my wife all my houses, lands, tenements and hereditaments in Eastbergholt for her life, and after her decease to Peter Cole my youngest son and to his heirs forever, upon this condition: If he shall pay unto my two daughters Sarah Cole and Mary Cole £400 in manner and form following, vizt. to my daughter Sarah £75 (which is part of a debt due to me by bond of £500 remaining now in his hands) within six months after my decease, and also to my daughter Sarah £125 more; and to my daughter Mary £125 within six months after my said wife's decease. If he default, the said premises to my two daughters Sarah and Mary and their heirs forever, after my wife's decease. Unto my wife all such household stuff that was hers before I married her, and one third of my household stuff, the other two parts thereof being divided between my two daughters Sarah and Mary Cole. Unto my grandchildren in New England £20. All the remainder of the money due unto me upon the £500 bond aforesaid unto the children of my son Edward Cole equally between them. Residue unto my said daughters Sarah and Mary, my executors. Witnesses: John Layman, Richard Royse.

Proved at London 31 May 1652 by the two daughters and executrices. (PCC 103 Bowyer: PROB 11/221/415)

ABIGALL COLE of [blank], co. Suff., widow. 20 Oct. 1654. Whereas I had bequeathed to me by the will of Edward Cole my late husband deceased all the household stuff which was mine before I married him, and also one third part of all his own household stuff, I do bequeath the same unto my five grandchildren being the children of my son Edward Cole, to be equally divided between them by my executor. Residue unto my daughter Sarah Cole, sole executrix. Witnesses: John Layman, John Page, John Whitlock.

Proved at London 14 May 1656 by Sarah Cole now the wife of Robert Fenne, the daughter and executrix. (PCC 193 Berkley: PROB 11/255/312)

Children (COLE) of Edward and Abigail (Brand)(Cornelius alias Joyner); order deduced from the wills of their grandparents, Peter (who

named only the first three) and Bridget Brand. The position of John (vii below) is speculative because his grandmother listed all the boys before all the girls; he could be placed anywhere from iv to vii.

- i EDWARD, son and heir, b. almost certainly in 1612, perhaps about July-August. He was named first in the will of Peter Brand in 1615, and must have been within six months of his 21st birthday on 24 Feb. 1632/3, because he was to receive his bequest from his grandmother after six months, whereas his brothers and sisters were to receive all theirs at age 21; had five children in 1654, four of whom were beneficiaries of their uncle Peter Cole in 1665.
- ii GRACE b. prob. late in 1613 or early in 1614; under age in Feb. 1632/3.
- iii PETER b. bef. 24 April 1615 (will of his grandfather Peter Brand); youngest son of his father in 1649; Citizen and Stationer of London; d. unm. bet. 14 Nov. 1665 and 22 Dec. 1665, possibly a victim of the Great Plague. His will:

PETER COLE, Citizen and Stationer of London, indisposed in body. 14 Nov. 1665. To my brother's second son James Cole and his heirs forever all my lands and tenements in East Bergholt, co. Suffolk, both free and copy. To William Marsh of London haberdasher if he be living £50. To Mr. Samuel Thompson £10 part of a greater debt he oweth me, and I make him overseer of this will. To Elizabeth Ridley the youngest daughter of John Ridley late Citizen and Stationer of London £200 to be laid out in land for her within one year. All other my personal estate to Edward Cole and Abigail Masoall and Mary Clarke being three of my brother Edward's children. I do make the abovesaid William Marsh haberdasher now living in Whitechapel in the Naggs head yard and the abovesaid James Cole executors.

Memorandum that the two bonds entered into, one for £157 10s, the other for £161 5s by William Streaton of Tenterden, co. Kent, to be paid to me or my executors, £200 do belong to Ursula Parry and her children to be so secured that her husband may not spend it. And the other part do belong to me. 14 Nov. 1665.

Witnesses: Robert Fenn, John Layman, Roger Chearkune, Sarah Fenn, Robert Fenn Junr., Habakuc Layman.

Proved at London 22 Dec. 1665 by the two executors. (PCC 153 Hyde: PROB 11/318/358)

- iv SARAH b. say 1617; under age in Feb. 1632/3 (grandmother's will); living 20 May 1685; m. by 14 May 1656 ROBERT FENN of East Bergholt. He died intestate, administration of his estate being granted on 20 May 1685 to Sarah Fenn, his relict (ESRO A6/29/67).
- v MARY b. say 1619; under age in Feb. 1632/3 (grandmother's will); d. unm. bet. 9 June 1653 and 29 Sept. 1653. Her will:

MARY COLE late of East Bergholt, co. Suff., spinster, deceased. 9 June 1653. In the presence of John Layman the elder of East Bergholt and John Pope of the same, yeoman,

did declare her last will and testament nuncupative in these words: "I do give my whole temporall estate of what kind soever, and in what hand soever it is, unto my sister Sarah Cole, and do ordayne and make her sole executrix of this my last will." Witnesses: John Layman, John Pope.

Proved at Westminster 29 Sept. 1653 by the sister and executrix. (PCC 376 Brent: PROB 11/232/76)

- vi ABIGAIL b. say 1622; under age in Feb. 1632/3 (grandmother's will).
- vii JOHN b. say 1625, at any rate after his grandfather Peter Brand made his will on 24 April 1615; beneficiary of his grandmother Bridget Brand in Feb. 1632/3; d. bef. 18 Aug. 1649, when his father in his will called Peter his youngest son.

Because his other children are accounted for, it is evident that the "grandchildren in New England" mentioned by Edward Cole the father in his will were the children of one or more of his children Grace, Abigail, or John. Their tentative birth order and dates, suggested by the wills of their Brand grandparents, strengthen my belief that the grandchildren were the children of only one of Edward's children, because, of these three, only Grace seems to have been old enough to have married before the Great Migration of 1634-38. Admittedly, either of the other two could have travelled as a teenaged servant in another household, but we must also consider why Edward Cole did not name any parent of the grandchildren. I believe that, either such parent had died, or Edward had disapproved of the marriage, and perhaps the emigration, but did not hold the elopement (?) or defection against the grandchildren. Such an explanation, plausible in respect of one child, is less likely to apply simultaneously to more than one. Disapproval of the marriage, and not merely the distance, could also be why no other member of the family saw fit to mention, in their wills, any of their kin in New England.

5 GRACE<sup>1</sup> RAVENS (Rev. Richard<sup>A</sup>, William<sup>B</sup>) was probably born at East Bergholt, co. Suffolk, ca.1591 and died at Watertown, Mass., on 3 June 1662. She married first at Wattisfield, co. Suffolk, on 26 Sept. 1611 JOHN SHERMAN, who was baptized at Dedham, co. Essex, on 17 Aug. 1585, son of Henry and Susan (Lawrence) Sherman and nephew of the Edmund Sherman whose tenant Grace's father had been. He was buried at Great Horkesley, co. Essex, on 24 Jan. 1615[/6]. Grace married secondly THOMAS ROGERS of Dedham, co. Essex, with whom she emigrated to New England ca.1634. He was a proprietor of Watertown, Mass., 1636-37, admitted freeman 17 May 1637, and died there on 12 Nov. 1638, aged 50 (Bond p. 412). Grace married thirdly, as his second wife, ROGER PORTER of Watertown, who as a husbandman from Long Sutton, Hampshire, had emigrated in September 1638, aged 55, with four daughters. He was admitted freeman of Watertown 22 May 1639 and was made a selectman of Watertown in 1648, where he died on 3 April 1654 (Bond pp. 406-7, 910). (Bond [p. 865] is the

source of the erroneous statement that Grace also married William<sup>1</sup> Palmer of Newbury; Grace's son John Sherman was a son-in-law of Palmer, not because Palmer was his stepfather but because John Sherman had married William Palmer's daughter Martha.) The undated will of Grace Porter was proved on 17 June 1662 (Middlesex Co. PR File 12652), and has been printed in full in NEHGR 51(1897):314. She named her son John Sherman, her daughter Elizabeth Smith, several grandchildren, and "my brother John Cooledge."

Children (SHERMAN) of John and Grace<sup>1</sup> (Ravens), baptized at Great Horkesley, co. Essex:

- 1 JOHN<sup>2</sup> bp. 3 Sept. 1612; emigrated with his mother to Watertown, Mass., ca.1634, and d. there 25 Jan. 1690/1, ae 76 [sic]; m. MARTHA<sup>2</sup> PALMER, daughter of William Palmer of Newbury, Mass., whose first wife (and mother of Martha) appears to have been Mary Stamworth (Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire [Portland, Me., 1929-39] p. 527). John and Martha (Palmer) Sherman had seven children. A descendant was Roger Sherman, a signer of the Declaration of Independence.
- 11 RICHARD bp. 7 Aug. 1614. He was not named in his mother's will, but he was known (or believed) to be living then, because when the inventory of the estate of Grace Porter was prepared on 8 July 1662, a note about the division of the estate between her other two children states: "In case their brother in England shall legally obtain against the estate, that they joyntly and equally do tender estate for satisfying the same..." (NEHGR 51[1897]:315).

Child (ROGERS) of Thomas<sup>1</sup> and Grace (Ravens)(Sherman), baptized Dedham, co. Essex:

- 111 ELIZABETH<sup>2</sup> bp. 16 Nov. 1617; emigrated with her parents to Watertown ca.1634; m. there ca.1640-41 DANIEL SMITH of Watertown (TAG 61:29), whose will dated 14 July 1660 was proved 2 Oct. 1660; inventory dated 24 Sept. 1660, value £260 11s (Bond pp. 439, 936); one child, a son Daniel who had seven children. George Herbert Walker Bush, U.S. Vice-President since 1981, is a 9th generation descendant of Daniel and Elizabeth (Rogers) Smith (information supplied by Gary Boyd Roberts of Boston, Mass.).

(to be concluded)

26 Bina Gardens, London SW5 OLA, England

THE ENGLISH ORIGIN OF GRACE (RAVENS) (SHERMAN) (ROGERS) PORTER  
AND MARY (RAVENS) COOLIDGE OF WATERTOWN, MASS.

(Concluded from Page 77)

By Michael J. Wood

6 BEZALEEL RAVENS (Rev. Richard<sup>A</sup>, William<sup>B</sup>) was baptized at Dedham, co. Essex, on 9 Dec. 1593 and buried there on 21 Oct. 1648. He married first JUDITH BROWNE, who was buried at Dedham on 16 Jan. 1644[/5]; he married secondly JANE

-----  
Judith (Browne) Ravens was a sister of Titus Browne and of Damaris, who at the time of her death was wife of John Wilkinson of Dedham, clothier, and had formerly been married to John Derrick. The will of Damaris Wilkinson, dated 23 Nov. 1635 and proved 16 March 1635[/6], names amongst others her brothers Titus Browne and Jeremy Browne, and says in part:

To my sister Judith Ravens L10 within 20 years after my decease if she then be living. To Nathaniell Ravens the son of my sister Judith L20. To John Ravens (brother of Nathaniell) L10. To his brother Samuell Ravens L10. To Edmund Ravens another son of my sister Judith L10. To my niece Judith Ravens L10, and to Mary Ravens my niece L10. If any of these children demand of my now husband any legacy given them by my former husband John Derrick, which are paid into the hands of Bezaleell Ravens their father, then their legacies bequeathed to them that shall make such demand to be void. Unto my sister Judith Ravens L5 yearly, and L6 in the hundred. If my sister Judith Ravens die before all these moneys grow due, my executor shall pay the use to her husband Bezaleel Ravens towards the bringing up of those children. If my sister die before the 20 years be finished, the L10 equally amongst her children. (Essex Record Office, Chelmsford, [hereafter ERO] D/ABW 53/210)

Children (RAVENS) of Bezaleel and Judith (Browne) (there may have been others born and died 1620-1637, when the Dedham parish register was neglected), order uncertain:

- 1 RICHARD bp. Dedham, co. Essex, 21 Nov. 1619; d.y. (He is not mentioned in the will of his aunt Damaris Wilkinson.)
- 11 NATHANIEL b. bef. 23 Nov. 1635, the date of Damaris Wilkinson's will. The legacy left to him is twice that of the other siblings, which proves that in 1635 Nathaniel was the eldest son. He was still alive in 1674 when he was appointed executor and named sole beneficiary of the will of his brother Samuel.
- 111 JOHN b. bef. 23 Nov. 1635; a tenant of Elizabeth Podd of Dedham at the time of her will in 1668, of which he was a witness (ERO D/ABR 8/307); bur. Dedham 28 Dec. 1691; m. ALICE FREEMAN, daughter of Robert and Katherine Freeman of Dedham. Her brother Nicholas, of Langham, co. Essex, clothier, left her 20s in his will dated 31 Jan. 1680 and proved 5 May 1684 (ERO D/ABR 11/407), and her first cousin

Robert Freeman of Dedham, clothier (great-uncle of the Margaret Freeman who married first, Thomas Salway of London, merchant, and secondly John West, 6th Baron De La Warr, and was ancestress of the later Barons), left her 10s every six months for life in his will dated 28 Dec. 1683 and proved 12 June 1684 (PCC 73 Hare: PROB 11/376/195). No issue.

- iv SAMUEL b. bef. 23 Nov. 1635, made his nuncupative will early in July 1674 as "Samuel Raven late of Dedham, co. Essex, dying in the parish of St. Mary Magdalen, Bermondsey, co. Surrey": "Being asked by his brother Nathaniel Raven how he would dispose of what he had, Samuel Raven the testator replied: 'What I have or shall leave I give unto you,' meaning Nathaniel Raven his brother." This will was proved 9 July 1674 (ERO D/ABR 9/507).
- v EDMUND b. bef. 23 Nov. 1635; bur. Dedham 19 Oct. 1641.
- vi JUDITH b. bef. 23 Nov. 1635; bur. Dedham 10 May 1664; unm.
- vii MARY b. bef. 23 Nov. 1635; n.f.r.
- viii ANNE bp. Dedham 21 June 1641; n.f.r.

Children (RAVENS) of Bezaleel and Jane (-----), baptized at Dedham, co. Essex:

- ix RICHARD bp. 19 July 1646.
- x JANE bp. 3 Oct. 1647; bur. Dedham 22 Nov. 1647.

7 WILLIAM RAVENS (Rev. Richard<sup>A</sup>, William<sup>B</sup>) was born probably at Dedham, co. Essex, ca. 1598; he married MARTHA -----, who was buried at Dedham on 10 Sept. 1654. A clue to her identity is in the will of George Crow of Dedham (1661) (see under her son Richard, below).

William may have had a first wife, for at Colchester St. Nicholas, one William Ravens married Joan Smith in 1623 (Boyd's Marriage Index; I have not checked the marriage in the actual register). The first children below are placed as children of William and Martha (-----) Ravens because (1) William and Bezaleel were the only Ravens fathers in Dedham at this time and they were not children of Bezaleel, and (2) the wife of Bezaleel is known and was not a Crow relative.

Children (RAVENS) of William and Martha (-----):

- 1 MARTHA b. ca. 1635; m. Langham, co. Essex, 23 May 1655 ROBERT BRABROOK of Dedham, widower.
- 11 RICHARD b. ca. 1638; bur. Dedham 17 Sept. 1702; m. ANN -----, who was bur. Dedham 28 Jan. 1693[/4]; kinsman and supervisor of the will of George Crow of Dedham, clothier, dated 14 Nov. 1661 and proved 11 April 1662 (ERO D/ABR 5/661).

Known child (RAVENS) of Richard and Ann (-----):

- 1 RICHARD bur. Dedham 15 Feb. 1678[/9].

- 111 NATHANIEL bp. Dedham 20 March 1641[/2]; n.f.r.

- iv SAMUEL bp. Dedham 21 April 1644; m. ELLES (Alice?) -----, who was bur. Dedham 29 Feb. 1671[/2]; two children.
- v MARY bp. Dedham 27 Sept. 1646; n.f.r.
- vi STEPHEN b. Dedham 9 April 1650, during the Commonwealth period when births were recorded; n.f.r.

8 EDMUND RAVENS (Rev. Richard<sup>A</sup>, William<sup>B</sup>) was baptized at Dedham, co. Essex, on 29 June 1600; he married at Wattisfield, co. Suffolk, on 23 Feb. 1624[/5] MARY GULL, daughter of Richard and Grizell Gull of Dedham; she was baptized at Dedham on 22 May 1604 and was buried there on 3 Dec. 1647. Edmund Ravens was a Dedham clothier.

Richard Gull of Dedham, carpenter, made his will on 10 March 1625[/6] (proved 31 March 1626), naming his son Thomas, under age 25, his daughters Elizabeth and Anna, under age 22, his son-in-law Edmond Ravens, his son Richard, and his son John, under 25. His house and grounds were in Ardleigh, co. Essex. He appointed his loving friend John Crosse sole executor. (PCC 42 Hele: PROB 11/48/329)

Grizell Gull of Dedham, widow, made her nuncupative will in March 1625/6 and because she named no executor, administration was granted (no date recorded) to John Crosse during the minority of the children; Thomas, Richard, Mary, Elizabeth and Anne Gull were all specifically named as her children (ERO D/ABW 47/83).

(Andrew Bacon [later of Hartford, Conn.] and Edmund Angier [later of Cambridge, Mass.] were witnesses to both wills.)

Mary (Gull) Ravens' sister Elizabeth married William Exoby or Exube of Dedham who by his will dated 20 May 1644 (proved 21 Sept. 1644) left to his "brother" Edmund Ravens one green chair, and appointed him executor (ERO D/A BW58/180).

Thomas Gunn [sic], "master of the Little Anne under Captain Crispe and other merchants of the Benny Company, being lately arrived into England," made his nuncupative will on 20 Dec. 1637, "lying sick in the house of one Nicholas Ordiner in Wapping, parish of White Chappell, co. Midx., did a little after dinner the same day speak unto Mary Ordiner wife of Nicholas to this effect, vizt. 'If I die, my desire is my brothers and sisters may have my estate equally. I have about £150 in ready money and Capt. Crispe owes me about £70 or £80. My brother John oweth me upon his house being mortgaged to me £50. My brother Richard oweth me £10. I owe 20s to Mr. Stephen Dunton, and 20s James Preston oweth me. I have many brothers and sisters and I have been more beholding to my brother Raven than to all the rest. I make my brother Ravens (meaning Edmond Ravens who married one of his sisters) and my father Crosse (meaning one John Crosse whom he usually called Father) my executors.'" This will, witnessed by Mary Ordiner and John Runting, was proved on 29

Dec. 1637 by Edmund Ravens<sup>s</sup>, one executor, power reserved to John Crosse, the other executor. (PCC 164 Goare: PROB 11/175/352)

Edmund and Mary (Gull) Ravens probably had several children born and baptized during the time when the Dedham register was neglected. Of the six recorded, only Nathaniel is not known to have died in infancy.

Children (RAVENS) of Edmund and Mary (Gull), baptisms and burials at Dedham:

- i NATHANIEL bp. 9 Oct. 1641.
- ii infant} buried 23 Oct.
- iii infant} 1642.
- iv MARTHA bp. 21 Oct. 1645; bur. 22 Nov. 1649.
- v infant bur. 11 Nov. 1649.
- vi infant bur. 15 Nov. 1649.

9 MARY<sup>1</sup> RAVENS (Rev. Richard<sup>A</sup>, William<sup>B</sup>) was baptized at Wattisfield, co. Suffolk, on 14 Nov. 1602; she died in Watertown, Mass., on 22 Aug. 1691, ae 88. She married ca. 1628 JOHN COOLIDGE, with whom she emigrated to Watertown by 25 May 1636 (when he was made a freeman); he was baptized at Cottenham, co. Cambridge, on 16 Sept. 1604, son of William and Margaret (Mayse) Coolidge, and died in Watertown, 7 May 1691, ae 88 [sic].

Children (COOLIDGE) of John<sup>1</sup> and Mary (Ravens) (all data below are from NEHGR 77[1923]:272-76 and Watertown Recs.):

- i JOHN<sup>2</sup> b. prob. England ca. 1630; d. Watertown, Mass., 8 Feb. 1690/1; m. (1) Watertown 14 Nov. 1655 HANNAH LIVERMORE; m. (2) Watertown 16 Sept. 1679 MARY (WELLINGTON) MADDOCK. John and Hannah (Livermore) Coolidge were ancestors of William Howard Taft, President of the United States.
- ii SIMON b. prob. England ca. 1632 (deposed 1659, ae ca. 27, 1662, ae 30); d. Watertown 27 Dec. 1693; m. (1) Watertown 17 Nov. 1658 HANNAH BARRON; m. (2) Watertown 19 Jan. 1681/2 PRISCILLA ROGERS. Simon and Hannah (Barron) Coolidge were ancestors of Calvin Coolidge, President of the United States.
- iii NATHANIEL b. ca. 1634; d. Watertown 3 Nov. 1711; m. Watertown 15 Oct. 1657 MARY BRIGHT.
- iv prob. ELIZABETH b. say 1634-35; m. (1) Cambridge, Mass., 17 June 1656 GILBERT CRACKBONE; m. (2) Cambridge 26 March 1673 RICHARD ROBBINS.
- v MARY b. Watertown 14 Oct. 1637; d. there 2 March 1659/60; m. there 19 Sept. 1655 ISAAC MIXER.
- vi STEPHEN b. Watertown 28 Oct. 1639; d. there 20 Feb. 1710/1; m. REBECCA -----.
- vii OBADIAH b. Watertown 15 April 1642; d. there 11 July 1663, unm.
- viii JONATHAN b. Watertown 10 March 1646/7; d. there bet. 12 Feb. and 16 March in 1723/4, the dates that his will was executed and probated; m. Watertown 3 Dec. 1679 MARTHA RICE.

### Appendix A: Unplaced Ravens

The places in the pedigree of the following Ravenses are uncertain.

A ALICE RAVENS, widow, buried at Dedham, co. Essex, on 28 July 1563, may have been the aged mother of the William who married Joan Starlyng. She may have also been the mother of Henry Ravens (B below). Perhaps Alice's husband was named Richard, for both William and Henry gave this name to one of their sons.

B HENRY RAVENS was buried as Henry Ravens the elder at Dedham on 8 June 1578; he married first at Dedham on 26 Feb. 1559[/60] ALICE ----- (maiden name not recorded), who was buried on 28 May 1560. He married secondly at Dedham on 10 Feb. 1560[/1] ELIZABETH CANE. She may have married again and have been the "sister Baker" to whom William Ravens gave 20s. in 1580.

Known children (RAVENS) of Henry and Elizabeth (Cane):

- i ELIZABETH bp. Dedham 30 Nov. 1561; bur. Dedham 17 July 1574.
- ii RICHARD bp. Dedham 20 Jan. 1564[/5]; n.f.r.
- iii poss. HENRY (by implication, from the form of his father's burial entry; although the designations "Sr." and "Jr." did not at this time imply that the latter was son of the former, the implied Henry Jr. can, in this instance, be placed only here); n.f.r.

C ALICE RAVENS of Ardleigh, co. Essex (the parish immediately to the south of Dedham), widow, made her will on 30 Aug. 1570 (proved 6 Dec. 1570), leaving household stuff to her daughters Catheren (see D below) and Margaret (ERO D/ACR 6/203).

D KATHREN RAVENS of Ardleigh, single woman, made her will on 10 May 1571 (proved 30 May 1571), in which she gave wearing apparel to Henry Chilen's wife Dennis, to Elizabeth Cocke widow, and to John Coolpack's wife Annis, and the residue to her sister Margaret the wife of John Kinge, the sole executrix; her friend Henry Chelen to be supervisor (ERO D/ACR 6/260).

### Appendix B: The Identity of Elizabeth Hedge, Wife of the Rev. Richard Ravens

The clue to the identity of Elizabeth, wife of the Rev. Richard Ravens, comes from the will of Christopher Burrough of East Bergholt:

CHRISTOPHER BURROWE of Eastbergholte, co. Suff., clothier. 3 Nov. 1606. Sick of body. My brother Jonathan Burrowe shall within six months procure the executors of my late father Christopher Burrowe deceased or two other able men to become bound unto my executors all such gifts and legacies as in this will I have appointed, which is,



if my said brother shall perform within the six months, he shall have forever all my messuages, lands and tenements in Eastbergholte, as well those of the manor of St. John's, as of the manor of Old Hall in Eastbergholte, and also my rights to one pump or well of water which I hold of one Mr. Lambe and have reserved the same from the house of George Goffe in Eastbergholt. My brother Jonathan or his guardians shall pay unto my executors who shall pay in form following. Unto my cousin William Cardynall L100. Unto my cousin Edmund Cardynall L100. Unto my cousin John Cardynall L100. Unto my cousin Robert Hedge L100 for the use of his children and to be equally divided at ages 21 years. Unto the children of my cousin Elizabeth Ravens L100, provided that if she or her husband put in good security to my executors to distribute the sum equally to their said children at the age of 21, then my cousin Elizabeth Ravens and her husband to have the profits thereof until the said children accomplish said ages. Unto the children of my cousin Alice Marks L200 [with a similar provision]. Unto Robert Thompson and Parnell his wife L100. Unto John Thorpe and Susan his wife L40. Unto my cousin Jeremy Hedge L20. My uncle Nicholas Hedge and my aunt his wife shall have their dwelling with the profits where they now dwell for life and unto them L30. Unto my uncle Stephen Cardynall L20. Unto Judith Cockerell my aunt L20. Unto my cousin Elizabeth Barker wife to Robert Barker L40. Unto my cousin Ann Corball one of the daughters of my aunt Dowe L20. Unto my cousin Christopher Dowe L50. Unto my cousin Michell Dowe L50 at full age. Unto my cousin Elizabeth Perse daughter to my uncle Cardynall deceased L30. Unto my cousin Thomazin Cardynall L30. Unto my cousin Rose Cardynall L30. Unto my cousin Mary Cardynall L30. If either of my cousins Thomazin, Rose or Mary die before receipt thereof, the said legacy shall be divided equally among the survivors. Unto my cousin Steven Cardynall L30, and if he be not thought meet to use the same, then my executors shall pay the same to my cousin William Cardynall and he to bind so much land as L30 is worth to pay Steven L3 a year for life, and if he die without issue, said L30 to be divided amongst the three daughters Thomazin, Rose and Mary. Unto my cousin Christopher Hedge (if he be living) L20; if he is not living, said L20 to his heir at age 19. Unto Steven Skynner of Barfold L20. Unto Michell Lewes ye younger L5. Unto Nicholas Denham L20. Unto Robert Skynner of Barfolde L5. Unto John Barwick of Stratford L10. Unto John Greenliff of Barfold L30, so as he discharge executors of all reckonings and demands. Unto Leonard Ussher 40s. Olyver Cheape, smith, to have his dwelling till [blank]. Unto poor of Eastberholte L20 forever; churchwardens to employ it after the rate of 2s in the pound, 40s a year, to the use of the poor. Unto the school of Eastberholte L20 forever; to be employed by the chief inhabitants of the town at rate of 2s in the pound, 40s a year, towards the maintenance of two poor scholars. L40 for payment of debts of John Burrowe my late brother deceased. If my brother Jonathan Burrowe do not procure the executors of my late father deceased within six months, my brother Jonathan shall have no part in this will. But then I give all said houses [etc.] unto my cousin Edward Cardynall, and if he refuse to perform the same, then to John Cardynall, and if he refuses, said lands [etc.] to be sold. Residue to be divided amongst my kindred where my executors shall see the most need. Executors: trusty and loving friends Edward Cardynall and [blank], to be bound to Samuel Skynner and John Haywarde of Eastbergholte clothier to perform this my last will and testament. 3 Nov. 1606:

unto Susan Hedge L20, unto Ruthe Hedge L20, unto Marian Hedge L20.

Proved as by definitive sentence with codicil at London 16 May 1607 by Edward Cardynall, executor named.

Sentence: re Christopher Burroughs late of Eastbergholte, co. Suff., deceased, between Edward Cardynall, executor of deceased, and Ann Harris als. Burroughs. (PCC 40 Huddleston: PROB 11/109/311)

Christopher Burrough outlived his father, also named Christopher, by two years. The older Christopher's will:

CHRISTOPHER BURROUGH of Wix Abbye, co. Essex, clothier. 16 Nov. 1604. Sick of body. Unto Anne my beloved wife 500 marks and household stuff [some named] as were hers at the time of our marriage. Unto Xpofer Burrough my eldest son, all my freehold and copyhold, be they houses, lands or leases, which I hold of William Cardynall, gent., and of the manor of St. Jone's [sic: rightly St. John's], and those held of the manor of Oldhall, Eastbergholt, co. Suff., and rights to one pump or well of water which I hold of one Mr. Lambe and have reserved the same from the house where one George Goff now dwelleth in Bergholt aforesaid (excepting 7 or 8 acres sometime William Smith's the tanner and late in occupation of Thomas Kneverd, and also excepting house I hold by surrender of Thomas Mannyng cooper in Bergholt). Unto said Xpofer 400 marks. Unto Jonath Burrough my youngest son all my houses and lands both free and copy in East Bergholt with the beerhouse and brewing vessels and the tanhouse, and also that free tenement where John Richardson dwelleth, all held of Mr. Lambe as of his manor of Hillaryes and Spencers, and unto Jonathan and his heirs 7 or 8 acres of land late in the occupation of Thomas Kneverd and holden of the manor of Oldhall. And unto Jonathan 400 marks at age 21. Unto my said sons Christopher and Jonathan 200 marks, to Christopher within 3 months, to Jonathan at age 21. Unto Elizabeth Burrough my daughter 500 marks at age 19. Unto Marie Burrough my daughter 500 marks at age 19. Unto Sara Burrough my daughter 500 marks at age 19. Mr. John Burrough of London, gent., will take into his custody these portions, as also my son Jonathan to be godly and virtuously brought up by him to learning at the Grammar School and in one of the Universities of Cambridge or Oxford until his age 21. My wife Anne shall have custody and bringing up of my daughter Elizabeth. My son-in-law Henry Goldingham shall have custody and bringing up of my daughter Marie. My son-in-law Alexander Harris, merchant, shall have custody and bringing up of my daughter Sara. If the said Thomas Mannyng do pay rent on house in his occupation, he shall enjoy same house again. House and land in Mannyngtree, Mistliegh and Lawford bought by me of one William Fenne, said William Fenne shall have first offer of acceptance or refusal for L120. All lands made over to me by the right honorable Henry Lord Windsor concerning debts due to me from him shall be sold, and the Lord Windsor shall have first offer for acceptance or refusal thereof. [Same for leases and bonds made over by Mr. Robert Barker, now Serjeant at Law.] My son Jonathan shall have all my lands in Langham, co. Essex, and those lands I hold by lease in Dedham. My son Jonathan shall pay out of the rents and profits of said lands unto [blank] Kyndersley, the son of Richard Kyndersley deceased, one annuity of L3 during the life of the said [blank] Kyndersley. Residue of goods to be sold and the money to be equally divided amongst my children at age 21. Christopher Burrough my son shall enter into

bond to my executors for 100 marks before the receipt of his legacy that he may quietly permit my brother Nicholas Hedge and Alice his wife to have and enjoy the house wherein they now dwell without paying any rent. The said Mr. Burrough and my son-in-law Henry Goldingham executors. And my son-in-law Mr. Allexander Harris and my son Christopher Burrough overseers. Witnesses: John Day, William Fuller his mark.

Proved at London 19 March 1604[15]. (PCC 20 Hayes: PROB 11/105/149)

Sentence: re Ipofer Burrough late of Wix, co. Essex, deceased, between Henry Goldingham, one other of the executors of the testament of the said deceased, of the one part and Anne Burrough relict of the said deceased and Christopher Burrough, Anne Harris als. Burrough, Abigail Goldingham als. Burrough and Elizabeth Burrough, natural and lawful children of the said deceased on the other part. (PCC 43 Hayes: PROB 11/105/332)

From the context in which is set the substantial bequest to the children of Elizabeth Ravens in the will of the younger Christopher, it is evident that she and Alice Marks were born into either the Cardynall or the Hedge families.

CARDYNALL. Fortunately this family is treated in the Visitation of Suffolk, 1612 (W.C. Metcalfe, ed., The Visitations of Suffolk [Exeter 1882], pp. 121-122):

Stephen Cardinall of East Bergholt, gent. married to his first wife Ann, daughter and coheir of Thomas Grith of East Bergholt, and had issue, -- William, son and heir [whose wife and children, two of whom were married, are given]; Adam, died young; Stephen, Robert and John, s.p.; Judith, married first to John Branston of East Bergholt, and to her second husband, George Cockerell of Cogshall in Essex; Anne, married to Christopher Burrough in East Bergholt; Jane, a maid; and to his second wife he married Mary, da. of ----- Fisher of Lincolnshire, and widow of ----- Spencer of Essex, and by her had issue, -- Humfrey; and Philip; Mary, married to Miles Orme of Lincolnshire; Margaret, died young.

There is thus no room in the Cardinall pedigree for Elizabeth Ravens and Alice Marks. Had they been more distant relatives on the Cardinall side, they would surely have received smaller bequests.

HEDGE. Unfortunately neither Nicholas nor Alice Hedge left wills, but Alice's father, John Burrough of East Bergholt, did:

JOHN BURROWE of Estbergholt, co. Suff., dioc. of Norwich. 10 April 1577. To Margaret my wife one annuity of 40s a year, to be paid by Chrofer my son. To the said Margaret 200 marks, that is, 100 marks within one year of my decease, and 100 marks within two years after my decease. All linen, beds and bedding, brass and pewter to be divided into two equal parts, Margaret my wife to have first choice. Margaret my wife shall have her dwelling and board with my son Christopher so long as she do keep herself a widow. To Nicholas Hedge my son-in-law and to Alice Hedge my daughter L50. To Robert

Hedge, Chrofer Hedge, Jeremye Hedge, Alice Hedge, Elizabeth Hedge, Susan Hedge and Ruth Hedge, the children of Alice Hedge my daughter, L10 apiece at ages 22. To Chrofer my son all that my head house in which I now dwell in with the tenement adjoining, and all my tenement at Brent Oke, and my wood called Fenne Wood with the field adjoining that I bought late of Stephen Cardinall to the said Chrofer my son and his heirs forever. Residue to Chrofer Burrow my son, sole executor. Witnesses: Roberte Hedge, Edmund Ritche, William Okey, and me Thomas Mellis, scriptor, William Okey his mark.

Proved at London 10 May 1577 by Chrofer Borowe, the executor. (PCC 16 Daughtry: PROB 11/59/125)

So did each of the parents of Nicholas Hedge:

JAMYS HEDGE of Easte Barholt, co. Suff. 13 Feb. 1553[14]. To be buried in the churchyard there. I will that Robert my son shall distribute to the poor people of East Barholt L5. To Elyzabeth my wife my houses, lands and tenements and four acres of wood that I late purchased of John Smyth in East Barholt for her life, and after her decease to Nycholas my son. To Robert my son my head house that I now dwell in with all the land on the backside as it is enclosed, and that tenement that Wyllm Reynolde and mother Keteryche dwelleth in, except that Elyzabeth my wife shall have the said house and land and the said two tenements together with Robert my son as long as she is a widow. To Robert my son all my broad cloth, wool and yarn, four ballets of wood, a bedle, my counter table, my loom, and a cupboard. To Nycholas my son 20 marks at age 22. To Anne my daughter 20 marks at age 20. To Margaret my youngest daughter 20 marks at age 20. Residue to Elyzabeth my wife. Robert my son, sole executor. Witnesses: Austen Kylldeby, Wyllm Orcher.

Proved 5 April 1554 at Ipswich. (ESRO R17/1)

ELYSABETHE MELLES of Este Barghoulte, co. Suff. 11 March 1566[17]. Sick in body. To be buried in the churchyard there. Unto Margaret Branston my daughter L6 13s 4d and she shall take the profits of my four milch beasts. Unto Ane Hedge and Margrett Hedge my daughters L13 6s 8d each at age 21, and all my household stuff, only reserving from them the best covering which I give unto Robert Hedge my son, and also one cupboard which I give unto Nycolas my son. Unto my two daughters Ane Hedge and Margaret Hedge to either of them a cow. Unto Elysabathe Hedge and unto Catheryn Hedge my son Robert Hedge's two daughters 40s apiece at ages 20. Unto Alys Hedge and unto Elysabeth Hedge my son Nycolas Hedge's two daughters 40s apiece at ages 20. Unto Cystofer Melles 40s. Unto Margarett Melles 5s. Unto the poor people dwelling within this parish 40s. Unto Margrette Branstone the daughter of Thomas Branstone the elder 40s at age 20. Residue equally between my two sons Robt Hedge and Nycolas Hedge, my executors. Robert Kyndersleye my supervisor, to whom 40s. Witnesses: Chrystoper Borrow, Thomas Lynckon, Alys Skynner, Roger Mopteyt.

Proved 30 Jan. 1567[18] at Ipswich. (ESRO W 20/68)

Elizabeth's second husband was Christopher Melles, a widower with two children of his own. An abstract of his will follows:

XPOFER MELLES of the town of Barholt, co. Suffolk, clothier. 9 March 1566[7]. Unto Elizabeth my wife L60 and all such household stuff [etc.] as she brought with her when she married me. Elizabeth my wife shall have the house in which I now dwell with that ground which I bought of Brown until the feast of St. Michael the Archangel 1568. Elizabeth my wife 4 milch neat [i.e. milk cattle]. Unto Margaret my daughter L60 within one year, and if she die, unto Xpofer my son. Unto the said Margaret my daughter the rest of half of stuff of household, and the other half to Xpofer my son. To Margarethe Hethe [sic] my wife's daughter L3 6s 8d at age 21. To Anne Hedge her sister L3 6s 8d within two years. Unto the poor people of Barholts L3. If there be not sufficient to discharge my debts and legacies then I will my tenement which Richard P'rson doth now dwell in be sold that I bought of John Kentinge, and also my tenement which Thomas Kente now dwelleth in. Unto Xpofer my son my house which I now dwell in which I bought of George Browne, upon condition that he shall enter into bond to John Burroughe and Robert Kyndersleye of Hybrooke [Holbrook, co. Suffolk] to the sum of L100 for the performance of this my last will and testament and further that he shall prove the same within three months after my decease. Witnesses: John Ramsey, John Borrowe, William Branstone, Robert Hedge.

Proved at London 8 May 1568 by Xpofer Melles, executor. (PCC 9 Babyngton: PROB 11/50/61)

Children (HEDGE) of Nicholas and Alice (Burrough); order deduced from their grandparents' wills:

- i ALICE b. say 1564 (named in the will of her grandmother Elizabeth Melles, 1567); d. by 24 May 1619; m. GEORGE MARKES of East Bergholt and had issue. In his will dated 24 May 1619 and proved 4 Dec. 1621, George Markes gave to his eldest son George "in consideration and leave of a legacy given unto him by one Cristover Burrow late of Eastbergholt Deceased wch remains in my hand" (ESRO W 57/122). His wife is not mentioned in his will and was clearly dead by then.
- ii ELIZABETH b. say 1566 (named in will of her grandmother Elizabeth Melles, 1567); m. ca. 1588 the Rev. RICHARD RAVENS, whilst he was teaching grammar at East Bergholt, and had issue.
- iii ROBERT b. say 1568; married and had issue.
- iv SUSAN b. say 1570; m. JOHN THORPE.
- v CHRISTOPHER b. say 1572; whether he was living or dead in 1606 his cousin Christopher Burrough did not know.
- vi JEREMY b. say 1574; living 3 Nov. 1606, when he was mentioned in the will of the younger Christopher Burrough.
- vii RUTH b. say 1576; apparently d. by 3 Nov. 1606 without issue.
- viii PARNELL b. say 1578 (after the date of the will of her grandfather John Burrough, in which she is not mentioned); m. ROBERT THOMPSON.

26 Bina Gardens, London SW5 0LA, England